



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

### Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

### About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>



~~4.128~~  
oc 5005.3

Bd. Jan., 1860.

Woman  
Singer





**L O V E .**

*UNIFORM WITH THIS VOLUME,*

And by the same Author,

WOMAN (LA FEMME).

One Vol. 12mo. Muslin. Price \$1 00.

LOVE.

("L'Amour.")

31/182

From the French of  
M. <sup>Jules</sup> MICHELET,

OF THE FACULTY OF LETTERS, CHIEF IN THE HISTORICAL SECTION OF THE NA-  
TIONAL ARCHIVES, AUTHOR OF "A HISTORY OF FRANCE," "HISTORY OF  
THE ROMAN REPUBLIC," "MEMOIRS OF LUTHER," "INTRO-  
DUCTION TO UNIVERSAL HISTORY," "L'INSECTE,"  
"L'OISEAU," ETC., ETC.

Translated from the Fourth Paris Edition, by

<sup>John H. Palmer</sup>  
J. W. PALMER, M.D.

Author of "The New and The Old," "Up and Down the Irrawaddy," etc.



NEW YORK:  
RUDD & CARLETON, 130 GRAND STREET,  
(BROOKS BUILDING, CORNER BROADWAY.)  
MDCCCLX.

Soc 5005.3

Aug. 28 1860

By exchange of Duplicates  
with C. A. Nelson.

Entered according to Act of Congress, in the year 1859, by  
RUDD & CARLETON,  
In the Clerk's Office of the District Court of the United States for the Southern  
District of New York.

---

R. CRAIGHREAD,  
Printer, Stereotyper, and Electrotypes,  
Carlton Building,  
81, 83, and 85 Centre Street.



## TRANSLATOR'S PREFACE.

---

THIS translation of a remarkable book is presented to the public in the sincere belief that it will do good—in the hope that it will help American husbands and wives to perceive, and to feel more deeply, certain things which, neglected, are often causes of lasting sorrow, in families that ought to be happy.

The author, eminent as a savant and a historian, by the position he holds in the world of letters commands beforehand our attention and respect; and this volume, in which he gives us the result of the observations of a lifetime, deserves our most serious consideration. The discoveries that have been made during the last half century, in regard to the physiology of woman, he has turned to the purpose of his work with stirring earnestness and eloquence. The book itself is a very bold one—and its boldness is its beauty, for it is the boldness of chastity, of a lofty and a tender morality. Hence I have thought it judicious to render it without expurgation, and as nearly as possible in Michelet's own forms of expression.

The intense interest which "L'Amour" has excited in Paris and London since its appearance in January last, seemed to have created a call for its immediate production in this country; and in the necessarily short time allowed by the publishers, it would have been impossible for the whole task to be correctly performed by any one person. Therefore, to my friends FRANK WOOD and B. ELLIS MARTIN, Esqs., of this city, by whom the original hurried draft of this translation was made, I here acknowledge my great indebtedness.

J. W. P.

NEW YORK, *May* 20, 1859.

# TABLE OF CONTENTS.



## Introduction.

### I.—THE OBJECT OF THIS BOOK.

The question of Love logically precedes those of the Family, of Society, of the State.—Moral sense has declined.—*The taste for solitary enjoyments, spirits, and narcotics.*—*Polygamy of the East.*—Maladies of the Brain and of the Matrix.—Even animals tend towards a monogamic union.—We have neglected to study the two essential features of Love.—Love is not a crisis, a drama, but an epopee.—It exercises an influence upon the will and upon art, . . . . . 7

### II.—THE REVELATION OF WOMAN.

Death has revealed woman.—The female suicides of Paris.—The founders of the science.—Woman's inevitable and sacred crisis.—She gives herself up irrevocably to man.—While her destiny was made manifest in science, her personality burst upon literature.—She has established her personality by a pretended war.—But she only wishes to be loved, . . . . . 15

## III.—THE ORIGIN OF THIS BOOK.

The idea of this book dates from 1836.—It was confirmed in 1844.—The confidence that young people reposed in the author.—The assistance he derived from the friendship of illustrious physicians.—Voluntary *fatality*, the habits, and the art of Love.—The form of this book, . . . . . 28

## IV.—THE MUTUAL DELIVERANCE OF THE MAN AND THE WOMAN.

Puget's *Andromeda rescued*.—Deliverance of the woman by the man.—Deliverance of the man by the woman.—A wife and an occupation.—The future spouse will be a guard to the young man, . . . . . 32

## Book First.

## CREATION OF THE BELOVED.

- I. WOMAN.—How much she differs from man.—The point in which she is superior . . . . . 43
- II. WOMAN AN INVALID.—The poetry of her peculiar crisis.—She is not capricious but barometric.—How much she needs attention, . . . . . 44
- III. WOMAN SHOULD WORK BUT LITTLE.—She is a very poor worker.—Doing nothing, she does everything, . . . . . 49
- IV. THE MAN SHOULD EARN ENOUGH FOR BOTH.—The Gospel which woman is to man.—A wife is a fortune in herself, . . . . . 52
- V. WHAT SHALL THE BRIDE BE?—Rich or poor?—Of the same race?—Of the same class? . . . . . 55

## Table of Contents.

ix

VI. SHOULD YOU CHOOSE A FRENCHWOMAN?—The English, German, Spanish, and Italian women.—The intelligence, brilliancy, and precocity of the French woman.—Marriage makes her beautiful, . . . . .	58
VII. WOMAN REQUIRES STABILITY AND COMPLETENESS IN LOVE.—She is, in all history, the element of stability.—For her the end of marriage is marriage itself (and maternity secondarily).—She invests in it more than the man does; hence every change is to her disadvantage.—Accidental epidemics of fickleness, desire of dress, &c.—The beloved is susceptible of an infinite renewing, . . . . .	59
VIII. YOU MUST CREATE YOUR WIFE; SHE HERSELF DESIRES NOTHING BETTER.—Modern love loves what it finds, less than what it creates, . . . . .	67
IX. AM I FIT TO CREATE A WOMAN?—The most blasé man may still love.—Marriage is generally a deliverance for the girl.—The French mother is so unreasonable as to be more beautiful than her daughter.—Marriage and happiness will embellish the latter.—The wife (of 19?) feels that her husband (of 28?) is triply her superior in knowledge and experience, and in his occupation.—Science must be humanized for her.—She is old by education, and he is young, . . . . .	69

## Book Second.

### INITIATION AND COMMUNION.

I.—LOVE IN A COTTAGE.—What influence have you over woman in society? No influence. In solitude? Every influence.—It would be otherwise in a better state of society.—The relative solitude of a tradeswoman, though surrounded by the
---

public.—In the beginning, however, Love needs meditation.— What the little house should be, . . . . .	78
II. MARRIAGE.—(In Roman law) <i>Marriage is consent</i> .—Is the new wife sufficiently protected by the Church, the State, the Family?—She trusts only in <i>him</i> , . . . . .	85
III. THE WEDDING.—The bridegroom should protect the young wife against himself.—The modern girl is not full-blooded.— Predominance of the nervous temperament.—Unjust distrust and scorn.—Agitation often makes her ill.—He should be scrupulously considerate for her, . . . . .	91
IV. THE AWAKENING. THE YOUNG MISTRESS OF THE HOUSE.— Quiet and solitude should be secured to her.—She inspects the house, its appointments, and the garden prepared for her, . . .	96
V. NARROWING THE HOME CIRCLE.—The closer we are, the more we love each other.—Our houses are divided too much into little rooms.—Rembrandt's interiors.—The young wife's presence does not distract the husband from his work, . . .	102
VI. THE TABLE—DIET.—To arrange and change her diet with care.—He nourishes her, she nourishes him, and they live through each other, . . . . .	108
VII. THEY SHOULD WAIT ON EACH OTHER.—An honest country girl for a servant is enough.—The husband as the servant of the wife.—To him who loves, the realities of nature do not at all impair the ideal, . . . . .	119
⌘ VIII. HYGIENE.—How important it is, in the beginning, that he should take possession of her who is to take such possession of him.—That he should study, attentively, the details of her physical life; should be discreet, and conciliate, without wounding the girlish timidities that still cling to her.— Country life, &c., . . . . .	120
⌘ IX. ON INTELLECTUAL FOUNDATION.—She longs to belong to	

## Table of Contents.

xi

him; still more, to be mentally possessed by him.—The difficulty of teaching a woman.—You must not give her aliment stronger than she can digest.—Plant in her the living germs of thought.—Too much reading wearies her mind.—Let her preserve “the velvet-down of her soul,” . . . . 127

- X. ON MORAL INCUBATION.—The woman wishes for no other aliment than the heart of her beloved, and has none nowadays.—You must, from her restricted love, lead her out to the great love.—She is incapable of dividing and subtracting, having as her mission *incarnation*.—Her life rhythmical, and scanned from month to month.—This division of time must be respected, and its ascending period turned to advantage.—She should not be fatigued in her time of gloom.—She thinks, while working with her hands.—Docile, and not servile, she broods over the germ in silence.—Advantages of a bed in common, for moral and religious communications, etc.—A beautiful and noble cause is needed, to melt her young heart, . 136

## Book Third.

### THE INCARNATION OF LOVE.

- X I. CONCEPTION.—The woman is very noble in love.—She risks her life to bestow happiness on the man.—She is influenced much less by her physical attractions than by her kindliness, her need of pleasing, of consoling, and renewing the heart of man.—Conception should be free and voluntary, . . . . 149
- II. PREGNANCY AND THE STATE OF GRACE.—The woman only meditates a superhuman infant, and it is this that endows her offspring.—The miracle of a new world that she bears within

her.—She herself has received a second life, and finds herself transformed.—The <i>childishness</i> of a pregnant woman.—All nature is on her side, and so should the law be, . . . . .	155
III. THE RESULT OF PREGNANCY: THE RIVAL.—The woman already belongs to the child.—Her sacrifice to fulfil two duties.—Submission and purity, . . . . .	162
IV. CONFINEMENT.—The husband's terrors.—The woman in labor prefers the midwife, the husband the doctor.—Danger has created a new bond between them.—Cruel condition of the woman.—Atlas of Messrs. Gerbe and Coste, . . . . .	166
V. LYING-IN AND CONVALESCENCE.—The husband is the best nurse.—The happiness of the wife when nursed by him.—What the wife's recompense should be.—The husband's recompense, . . . . .	172

### Book Fourth.

#### THE Languishing of Love.

I. NURSING AND ESTRANGEMENT.—The wife blends her two loves as in a dream.—The infant unites and separates them.—He has taken his father's place, . . . . .	183
II. THE BUTTERFLY.—The wife concentrating herself over the cradle, the husband disperses himself abroad.—The overwhelming variety of modern society conspires against the woman and the home.—And yet the man in her alone preserves his divine spark, . . . . .	188
III. THE YOUNG MOTHER SEPARATED FROM HER SON.—She suffers when he is unhappy at school, and still more when he is contented there.—Her sadness, her first glimpse of the world, . . . . .	194



# Table of Contents.

xiii

- IV. OF THE WORLD—HAS THE HUSBAND DEGENERATED?—By his speciality and his occupation he has acquired strength, but he has lost in brilliancy and elevation.—The modern man, a worker and a *creator*, has not the symmetry of the man of ancient times (the hero).—Society prefers the *amateur*, and favors him with the wife against the interests of the husband.—Is it true that woman is a disappointer of justice?—Novels.—The strong man is not afraid of novels.—Granville.—*La Victoire*, . . . 199
- V. THE SPIDER AND THE FLY.—How women ruin women.—Stratagem, or semi-violence.—The wife often betrays her husband through affection for him.—Did she really consent?—The endless degrees of which the will is susceptible.—Courts of justice need the continual presence of a medical jury to determine the proportions of freedom and compulsion, . . . 211
- VI. TEMPTATION.—The woman at her meridian of life and health.—The purest may be troubled, loving him whom her husband loves, . . . . . 223
- VII. A ROSE FOR A COUNSELLOR.—Let her listen to her conscience and the voice of innocent nature, which will guard her purity.—Humiliation of her who feels herself weak and yielding.—Recourse to conjugal confession.—Conjugal discipline besought and refused.—She is treated with gentleness, enlightened, and reconducted to the path of reason.—The error of the heart often is, that it regards as the faculty and merit of the individual what belongs to a whole nation or race, . . . 230
- VIII. THE MEDICATION OF THE HEART.—The fearful consequences of the wife's adultery.—In general she is far from foreseeing these; she sins through heedlessness, and is often visited by terrible remorse.—Examples.—The most common causes of her fall are ennui and idleness.—Do not forsake her, whatever she may have done.—The woman, having given herself up entirely

in marriage, and being transformed by impregnation, loses everything by divorce.—Never strike her, no matter how she has sinned.—A case in which her conscience will prompt her to expiation.—The best remedy is to remove her from evil surroundings; to purify and renew her, if possible, by travel. . 241

IX. MEDICATION OF THE BODY.—After plethora and passion, come weakness and illness.—This is the test of love.—Raymond Lulli and M \* \* \*.—Misery of the woman, who fears she will be an object of disgust.—The husband alone should attend her.—She already perceptibly gains, by feeling herself inclosed in him, and by unburdening herself to him.—No cure without confession.—To remove her fears of death.—The husband should be her priest, and if possible, her physician.—He alone knows her perfectly, for he has in great measure made her.—Nothing heals such an invalid sooner than the knowledge that she is loved and desired. . . . . 250

### Book Fifth.

#### THE REJUVENESCENCE OF LOVE.

I. WOMAN'S SECOND YOUTH.—Her sadness.—She is already enfeebled when man is at the acme of his strength.—Even the successes of the husband separate her from him.—He is so much the more exposed to the temptations of the world.—She becomes his zealous assistant, his young partner and comrade in business or pleasure.—She understands his most subtle thought, and returns it embellished to him, . . . . 260

II. SHE PRESCRIBES AND REGULATES HIS DIET AND HIS RECREATIONS.—The good Circe.—She watches over and sedulously attends to the repasts of her husband.—She preserves him from

## Table of Contents.

xv

<p>excesses.—Man has more desire as he advances in life.—To the weary and care-worn man, pleasure is a consolation.—A good wife is the entertainment, the <i>child</i> of the house, and the <i>Divine Comedy</i>, . . . . .</p>	277
<p>III. SHE REFINES HIS MIND, OR INSPIRES IT.—A calm wife harmonizes the mind, and imparts perfect clearness to the inventive faculties.—Even the Middle-Ages only accomplished their three great works through married men.—Planned abstinences; the morning impulses of Puget.—Contact with a pure woman purifies a man.—Love postponed, by love, has affinities with the sublime, . . . . .</p>	286
<p>IV. THERE ARE NO OLD WOMEN.—The great modern artists have deeply felt the beauty of goodness, and have preferred to paint the suffering and already mature woman.—The face grows old long before the body.—Amplitude of form is favorable to the expression of goodness.—A generation which should only love young girls, and should not be refined by intercourse with women, would remain for ever gross.—A woman who loves, and who is good, can, at any age, bestow happiness, and endow a young man, . . . . .</p>	291
<p>V. AUTUMNAL ASPIRATIONS.—Sadness and fears of the matured woman.—To be separated by death.—To grow old, and not justify the cherished illusion of him who loves.—How she can make herself beautiful.—Superiority of this acquired beauty, which is not an accident of race, family, etc.—The graceful things that were impossible to youth, . . . . .</p>	296
<p>VI. IS UNITY OBTAINED?—Each accession of years has added one more bond to the union.—All desire is at first an idea; love can always renew itself by ideas; hence time is no obstacle to it.—The only obstacle to an absolute union is in the essence of love itself; as long as they live they must remain two.—The</p>	

woman inclines towards mercy, and with difficulty follows man in the path of justice, . . . . .	304
VII. DEATH AND AFFLICTION.—Death has followed love in this book, to strengthen and prolong it.—It is for the man to die, for the woman to weep, . . . . .	308
VIII. OF LOVE BEYOND THE GRAVE.—Like rejoins like.—In becoming like the departed, she rejoins him.—The widow is his retarded soul.—She preserves his memory, keeps together, and multiplies the number of, his friends, loves him more and more in the growth of his posthumous renown, . . . . .	313

### *Notes and Explanations.*

Of the three Parts, of which a complete work on Love should consist, the Author has given in this volume only the second.—He regrets that he has not been able to develop the chapters on culture, education, and moral discipline.—Of his too numerous notes he gives but the following, . . . . .	323
---	-----

#### NOTE 1.

##### A GLANCE AT THE ENSEMBLE OF THIS BOOK.

And especially at the Rejuvenescence of Love, . . . . .	327
---	-----

#### NOTE 2.

##### IS THE AUTHOR JUSTIFIED IN BELIEVING THAT WE CAN STILL LOVE ?

Official statistics on the decline of marriage, etc.—Although Europe is diseased, it has still reason to hope.—The decline of	
---	--

## Table of Contents.

xvii

the Roman empire was preceded by a grievous obscuring and enfeebling of the mind; but now intelligence and invention are on the increase.—Moral progress in the religion of the dead, and the love of nature, since 1800.—The immense majority of French and other Europeans who have no knowledge of fashionable vices.—The young man of the world may not hope to attain a high position unless he concentrates his life, and depends upon a home, . . . . . 330

### NOTE 3.

#### WOMAN REINSTATED, AND PROCLAIMED INNOCENT BY SCIENCE

All the Fathers, following the Hebraic tradition, condemn woman, and declare her to be impure.—Chemistry proves *that she is pure*.—Physiology has shown that she is constantly a wounded person, an *invalid*.—By that title she has always, in law, her extenuating circumstances.—The death punishment not to be inflicted on women.—A pregnant woman cannot be arrested except at the risk of committing two murders.—The ancient German laws allowed her a few little pilferings.—A wish that every court of assize had the continual assistance of a medical jury.—Justice must become Medicine, and Medicine must become justice and morality, . . . . . 334

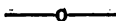
### NOTE 4.

#### OF THE SOURCES OF THIS BOOK OF LOVE, AND THE SUPPORT THAT PHYSIOLOGY LENDS TO MORALITY.

Men of letters (Senancour, Balzac, and others) have aided me but little; but physicians have afforded me infinite sup-

port.--Under harsh, cynical and materialistic exteriors, they have nevertheless founded one of those grand ideas of the soul, which may be called (when it concerns woman) the *Creed of Mercy*.—They have humanized marriage, removed from it the material barbarism which still clung to it.—They have demonstrated that what was called impurity is the monthly wound of love, and fruitfulness itself.—They have established, that from the highest to the lowest, from the least of created things up to the greatest, fecundation is not ephemeral, but often prolonged far into the future.—The physical principle which consecrates the stability of marriage.—Love implies a soaring towards the infinite, and a flight into eternity, . 336

# LOVE.



## INTRODUCTION.

### I.

THE title which would fully express the design of this book, its signification, and its import, would be: Moral Enfranchisement, Effected by True Love.

This question of Love is lodged, immense and obscure, under the depths of human life. It even supports its bases and its lowermost foundations. The Family rests upon Love, and Society upon the family. Hence Love goes before everything.

As the manners are, so is the community. Liberty would be but a word if we preserved the habits of slaves.

Here we seek the Ideal. The ideal which can be realized to-day, not that which we must postpone for a better state of society. It is the reform of Love and of the Family which must precede all others, for it alone can render them possible.



One fact is incontestable. In the midst of all our

material and intellectual progress, our Moral Sense has degenerated. Everything advances and develops, one thing alone recedes ; it is the Soul.

At this truly solemn era, when the net-work of electricity is spread over all the face of the earth, centralizing universal thought, and permitting the world at last to know itself—what sort of soul shall we have to give it ? And what if old Europe, from whom it expects everything, should contribute but an impoverished soul ?

Europe is old, but she is also young, in this sense : that she has, to counterbalance her corruption, the rejuvenescence of genius. It is her task to reform the world by reforming herself. She alone knows, sees, and foresees. Let her but have the will to do it, and all is yet safe.

---

We cannot conceal from ourselves that in these latter times the Inclinations have undergone profound changes. The causes of this are numerous. I will state two only, mental and physical at the same time, which, going straight to the brain and deadening it, tend to paralyse all our moral faculties.

For a century past, the increasing invasion of spirituous liquors and narcotics has been marching irresistibly, with results varying according to the population—here obscuring the mind, hopelessly depraving it—there, penetrating deeper into the physical economy, reaching even the race itself—but everywhere isolating man, giving him, even in his home, a deplorable preference for solitary enjoyment.

No need to him of society, of love, of family ; in their stead, the dreary pleasures of a polygamic life, which,



imposing no responsibility upon the man, not even protecting the woman (as the polygamy of the East does), is therefore more destructive, indefinite, limitless, stimulating and enervating continually.

Marriages are steadily on the decrease (*vide* the official reports). And, what is not less serious, the woman is not married until very late. In Paris, where she is precocious, and marriageable at an early age, she does not become a wife before her twenty-fifth year. Hence, eight or ten years of waiting, most frequently of misery, sometimes of disease in consequence. Marriage is not even binding enough to warrant desertion.

An inhuman state of things is that where love is but a war upon the woman, profiting by her misery, debasing her; and, when debased, casting her off to starve.

---

Each century is characterized by its great malady. The thirteenth was that of leprosy; the fourteenth, of the plague; the sixteenth, of syphilis; the nineteenth is stricken at the two extremities of nervous life—the intellect and the affections—as shown in the man by the enervated, vacillating, paralytic brain; in the woman by the painfully ulcerated matrix.

The punishment is this: this suffering woman will bring forth, from her pain-torn womb, but a sickly infant, who, if he lives, will always seek, to counteract his natural enervation, a fatal relief in alcoholic and narcotic stimulants. Let us accept the painful supposition that such a man reproduces his kind: he will have from a more diseased woman a still more enervated child. Rather let us have death for the remedy and the radical cure!

It has been fully felt from the commencement of the century that this question of love is the essential question, which is being discussed under the very foundations of society. Where love is established and powerful, everything is strong, solid, and fruitful.

The illustrious Utopians who, on so many other subjects (on that of education, for example), have thrown much and vivid light, have not been so fortunate on the subject of love. Here they have shown, I will venture to say, but little independence of mind. Their theories, bold in form, are not the less, in substance, subservient to fact, timidly predicated on the manners of the times. They found polygamy, and they bowed down before it, creating polygamic Utopias for the future.

Without any great philosophic research, in order to find the true law for this matter, they might have consulted History simply, and Natural History.

In History, races of men are powerful in mind and body, exactly in the ratio of their monogamic life.

In Natural History, the superior animals tend towards the married state, and attain it, at least for a time. And it is from this fact, in great measure, that they are superior.

It is said that the love of animals is inconstant and variable, that mobility in pleasure is with them a state of nature. I see, however, that, from the time there is any possible stability, or regular means of living, temporary marriages at least are contracted between them; entered into not merely for the love of generation, but from actual affection. I have remarked this a hundred times, but particularly in Switzerland in a couple of finches. The female having died, the male abandoned

himself to despair, and left the young to perish. Evidently it was love, and not paternal love alone, which had bound the male finch to his nest. When *she* was dead, all was over.

Increasing scarcity of food as the season advances obliges many of the species to dissolve their temporary marriages. Then the pair must needs separate, to extend the radius of their purveying search; and they can no longer return to the same nest at night. Thus they are divorced by hunger, not by mutual consent. The little industrious habits that an established union always engenders are interrupted, annulled.

But for this they would remain together. It is not pleasure alone which keeps them so, for the fructifying female communicates none. It is the true instinct of society, of life in common; the delight of feeling near you, all day, one little soul devoted to yourself, which leans upon you, calls upon you, feels the want of you, never confounds you (finch or nightingale, as you may be) with another of the same species, listens to your song alone, and often replies to it by low and plaintive cries—in a whisper, so to speak (that she may be heard by but one), from her heart to yours.

---

In our day the question of love has been profoundly considered. Writers of genius, one in immortal romances, another under a theoretical form, eloquent, acrimonious, and austere, have forcibly agitated it. For reasons which will be understood, I refrain from examining their books; our points of discussion will appear plainly enough in my own. I will permit myself to say, however, despite my admiration and sympathetic re-

spect, that on neither side has the gist of the matter been satisfactorily penetrated.

Its two faces, the one physiological, the other moral, yet remain veiled.

The discussion continues without any one knowing, or deigning to remark, that it bears upon more than one point where the supreme authority, that of facts, has pronounced its verdict, and settled the matter beyond all cavil. The object of love, woman, in her essential mystery long unknown, unrecognised, was revealed by a series of discoveries, dating from 1827 to 1847. We now know this sacred being, who, precisely in what the Middle Ages characterized as impurity, was in reality the saint of the saints of nature.

The innate fickleness of woman is known; and not less her constancy, which marks with such fatal durability all union and marriage.

How can we speak of love without saying a word of this?

---

Still another essential thing: love is not, as people say, or would have you believe, a crisis, a drama in one act. If it were but this, an accident so transitory would hardly be worth our attention. It would be only one of those ephemeral, superficial maladies, of which we strive to rid ourselves at as little cost as possible.

But, very fortunately, love (and here I mean faithful love, fixed only upon one object) is a succession, often a long one, of very different passions, which feed and renew our lives. Leaving those *blasés* classes who have need of tragedies, of abrupt changes of scene, I perceive that love still continues the same, at times all a life long,

with different degrees of intensity, and exterior variations which do not alter the substance. Granted, that the flame only burns on condition of its changing, going up or down, intensifying, varying in form and in color. But nature has provided for this. Woman ceaselessly alters her aspects; one single woman contains a thousand of them. And the imagination of man changes also its points of view. On the ground-work, generally solid and tenacious, of habit, circumstances construct changes which modify and renew the affection. Take, not the exception (the refined, romantic world), but the rule (the majority, the homes of working men, which form nearly the whole); you see there that the man, older than the wife by seven, ten years perhaps, and having seen besides much more of life, is much superior at first to his young companion in experience, and loves her somewhat as his daughter. She overtakes him or passes him very soon; maternity, the wisdom of economy, augmenting her importance, she counts for as much as he does, and she is loved like a sister. But when work has worn the man down, the sober and serious wife, the good genius of the house, is loved by him as a mother. She cares for him, provides for him; he reposes upon her, and often allows himself to be like a child to her, feeling that he possesses in her a good nurse and a visible providence.

See to what is reduced, *among little folks*, that great and terrible question of the superiority of one sex over the other, a question so irritating when it comes to concern the *upper classes*. It is, above all, a question of age. You will see it solved, the day after the marriage, to the man's profit, when the wife is yet a young

girl—solved later to the advantage of the woman. When, on Saturday night, the man brings home his week's salary, and she puts aside the necessary portion to feed and clothe the children, she leaves for her husband enough for his little indulgences; and she forgets no one but herself.

---

If love is but a crisis, we can also define the Loire an inundation.

But you must remember that that river, in its course of two hundred leagues, in its various and multiplied offices, as a great thoroughfare, irrigating the earth, refreshing the air, etc., has thousands and thousands of means of influence. It is doing it injustice to view it solely in that violent aspect which you may think most dramatic. Let us leave then its accidental drama, which really is but secondary. Let us rather look upon it in the regular epopee of its great life as a river, in its salutary and prolific characteristics, which are none the less poetic.

In love, the dramatic moment is interesting, without doubt. But it is that of the fatal violence to which you can be but a passive looker-on, where you have but very little influence. It is like the torrent which you observe at its narrowest point, foaming and furious. You must take it in the totality and continuity of its course. Higher up it was a peaceful brook, farther down it becomes a mighty river, but a calm one.

Love is a power easily disciplined. It gives, as does all other natural strength, a foothold for the will, for the art which, say what you will to the contrary, very easily creates it, and as easily modifies it by its surroundings, exterior circumstances, and habits.

How shall the man, older, more experienced and enlightened, initiate the young woman ?

How shall the developed woman, arrived at her apogee of grace and power, retain, retake the heart of the man, help him when he is weary, renew his youth, give him wings to soar above the miseries of life and of labor ?

What influence has man over woman, woman over man ?

This is a science, an art. We give here the clue ; others will go deeper.

To sum up :

Hitherto Love has been regarded only in its least instructive phase.

One of its forms, an inevitable and profound one, that of its relations to Natural History, has an immense influence upon its moral development. This has been neglected.

It has likewise a free and voluntary character, where Moral Philosophy acts upon it, and which also has been neglected.

This book is a first attempt to fill these two vacuums



## II.

So long as the inevitable and invariable side of love was not turned to the light, we did not know precisely where its liberty, its own spontaneous and variable action, commenced. Woman was an enigma. Still we

could prattle about her eternally, give the *pro* and the *con*—nothing more.

One alone stepped forward, among these speech makers, and put an end to the discussion: one who understands it thoroughly—the sister of Love: Death.

These two powers, apparently in opposition, cannot go on without each other. They contend with equal strength. Love does not kill Death, Death does not kill Love. At the bottom of all this, they understand each other wonderfully. Each of them explains the other.

Observe, that death was needed (in order to catch the yet lukewarm life)—death in its sudden and cruel form, violent death. It is death, after all, which has taught us the most. It was the hangman's victims who revealed to us the mysteries of digestion; and suicidal women those of physical love and generation.

A place, too, had to be found where violent death was common, where suicide ever afforded to observation an immense number of women of all ages, the greater part of them in their crises of suffering; some at that monthly period when they are exalted by nature; others, *enceintes*, hoping to die with their infants; and veritable virgins, poor, bruised flowers, who despaired of ever being loved.

I have not the exact figures for Paris. But the place in Paris where they expose the bodies of those who do not die in their beds, La Morgue, receives fifty a year. This makes five hundred in ten years! An enormous number, when you consider their natural timidity and their extreme fear of death.

In what month are these violent deaths of women



most common? In the beautiful months, when they feel their desertion most cruelly; in the blooming months, when women love most. For it is an essential fact that love, generation, is most sought by man in the holidays of winter and in the banquets which follow them; by woman in the season of flowers, under the purest influences of reviving nature, of the sunshine, and of spring. Then can they least support their painful isolation, their inconsolable misery, and they prefer to die.

The statistics do not show this. They class the greater part of those who die thus, in the exaltation of love, under the head of lunatics.

---

From the commencement of the century, Science has been progressing towards the great revelation. Geoffroy Saint-Hilaire and Jerres created embryogeny. Baër (1827) commenced ovology, and was followed by Messrs. Négrier and Coste. In 1842, a master, Pouchet de Rouen, reduced the whole science to a formula, and by a book of genius set it up for the future in proportions of daring grandeur.

We have noted little beyond the inferior mammalia; woman herself very little. The ingenious and learned Coste and his able assistant Gerbe (an anatomic artist), had the glory and the good fortune to discern all the truth. For nearly ten years (from the creation of the professorship of ovology to the publication of the incomparable atlas which completes these revelations), they read death itself, and hundreds of women disclosed to them the supreme mystery of love and of pain.

What is the total result of this solemn inquest? What comes of this great and cruel wreck of woman, of this funereal alluvium deposited each year by isolation, abandonment, betrayal, despair?

What comes of this wreck is a great truth, changing infinitely the ideas that were entertained of woman.

That which the Middle Ages insulted and degraded, and called impurity, is precisely her holiest crisis; what constitutes her an eminently poetic and religious object. Love had always believed this, and love was right. The stupid Science of the time was wrong.

But woman labors under a great fatality. Nature favors man. She gives woman to him, feeble, loving, depending on the constant need of being loved and protected. She loves in advance him to whom God seems to lead her. To distrust, resist, stop herself in this descent, she must have much more strength of mind than we ever need, and ten times more virtue. What a duty for us? Nature confides her innocent daughter to the magnanimity of man.

---

But there is yet something of greater importance. Facts, coming from another source (*v. Lucas*, vol. ii., p. 60), commence to prove that the union of love, whither the man betakes himself so lightly, is for the woman much more profound and definitive than has ever been believed. She gives herself up, entirely and irrevocably. The phenomenon observed in the inferior female animals is found, less regularly indeed, but still is found, in woman. Fecundation transforms her in a lasting manner. The widow frequently bears to her second husband children which resemble her first.

This is a great and terrible fact. The conclusion is overwhelming for the heart of man. What ! has Nature done so much for him, favored him to this degree ? He, too, who makes the laws, has favored himself, armed himself against a poor, weak creature whom suffering has delivered up to him ! With this double advantage how gentle he should be towards the woman, how tender in his protection !

The vital flux and reflux, the profound renewing that she suffers with so much pain, makes her the gentlest, the most modifiable of beings. As soon as you love her, envelop her, isolate her from bad influences. Every folly of woman is born of the stupidity of man.

---

With what perfect harmony, with what astonishing regularity, is composed the great movement of life and of ideas ! The details come all confused, it seems, and quite by chance. Stand off, and look at the ensemble ; you are more than surprised, transfixed with admiration, by the singular appropriateness with which pieces quite unlike, and apparently disconnected, knowing not each other, fit together and arrange themselves, to build up the eternal poem.

During this period of twenty years, when the physical dependance of the woman was so forcibly demonstrated by Science, her free personality not less strongly burst upon Literature. To that law of nature which subjects her to pain, makes her a suffering creature, she replies : " No, I too am a soul."

Behold her then revealed, both in her destiny and in her personality. By as much as on the one hand she commands our pity, on the other she compels our admira-

ration and respect. On both sides an unexpected happiness is opened to us, that of increased love, an infinite prospect into depths of love.

Who will deny this new power with which she has burst forth? The great prose-writer of the century is a woman, Madame Sand. Its most impassioned poet is a woman, Madame Valmore. The greatest success of the age is that of a woman's book, Mrs. Stowe's novel—the gospel of liberty for a race, translated into all tongues.

---

If the first words of the woman seem rebellious, who can mistake the cries of pain which come from that poor invalid, in the agitation of her awakening? Care for her, and love her . . . Ah! but the proudest of her sex would gladly give all the glories of the world for a moment of true love! The book that woman longs to write in, the only book, is man's heart—to write there in letters of fire, never to be effaced.

Literary demonstrations have much exaggerated the changes that have taken place. All this agitation is on the surface. Woman is what she was. As recent science explains her to us, with love's wound bleeding in her always, softened by suffering, glad to rest upon some one, such she was, such she remains. Wherever she is alone, where the world does not spoil her, she is a good and docile creature, willingly submitting to our habits, which are often very offensive to her, subduing man's rude will, civilizing him and ennobling him.

Women and children form an aristocracy of charmings and grace. The bondage of business debases man, and often renders him coarse and avaricious. Woman's bondage is simply that of nature; it is nothing but her

weakness, her suffering; and these render her touching and poetic.

Correggio never tired of painting very young children, at the period when the lacteal life, the physical and helpless life, being passed, the first ray of their little freedom appeared. It is then revealed, with unspeakable grace, in their pretty motions. The child is pleasing because he feels himself free and much beloved, because he knows instinctively that he can do everything that he pleases, and that he will always be loved the more for it. The mother is not less delightful in this first transport: "Ah! how active he is! and how strong too! . . . he can beat me already!" These are her exclamations. She is happy; she adores him in his resistings, in his charming rebellions. . . . Does he love his mother the less for that? She knows too well the contrary. If he sees her looking at all sorry, he throws himself in her arms again.

Why was not the man to the woman, at the first outbreak of her individuality, what the mother is to the child?

For a long time she seemed dumb, said nothing.

See, on the Indian stage, the sadness of the lover when he cannot obtain a word from that beautiful mouth. How does he know that he is loved? and is it a person or a thing that loves him? "In the name of those you love, will you never speak to me? . . . Oh, my God! how shall I know? . . . ." This silence, this eternal ignorance of the consent accorded, and of the thought hidden, is, in reality, a true divorce. It is the cause of that sadness so often described, of that fury of which Lucretia speaks, of that despair even in the midst of pleasure.

At last she has spoken! . . . . O joy, it is a living creature! From the overwhelming darkness her freedom is now rescued. . . . She can hate. . . . So much the better, for then she can also love. I wished her thus. This first quick, strong outbreak delights me, does not frighten me. Let us be friends, beautiful Clorinda. Heaven keep me from ever crossing swords with you. I would much prefer being wounded! . . . But, alas! you are so already. Stern nature wished you to be always wounded, that we might always have an opportunity to cure you.

---

To speak frankly, between us men (but let it not come to the ears of the women), we have made ourselves very ridiculous by getting angry, and scolding. The duel was all a mock one.

They have not used the warlike words which have been uttered in their name. Where they have not obliging female friends to teach them the arts of war, they are peaceable, gentle, and ask for nothing but to be loved.

But this is their utmost wish, and for it they spare nothing. A lady (Madame de Gasparin), in a book mystically beautiful, eloquent, tender as it is solemn, declares to us that their happiness is in obeying, and that they desire the man to be the stronger, that they love those who command, and do not dislike the rigor of the command.

This lady, who believes that she follows the Apostle, but leaves him far behind in the spring of her young heart, assures us that a passive and patient obedience does not suffice for woman, that she wishes to obey for

love's sake, actively, obey even in advance of the possible desire, the divined thought, and without ever crying enough, until she sees the satisfied nod of the beloved object.

A true and profound revelation this. It is much more man's indifference than his tyranny that torments woman, much more her not having occasion to obey enough than performing the simple act of obedience. It is of this she complains.

No barriers, no external protection are wanted here. They serve, justly remarks this author, only to make mischief between husband and wife, and to render the woman miserable. Nothing remains between him and her. She goes to him strong in her weakness, in her defenceless bosom, in her heart that beats for him alone.

This is woman's warfare. The most valiant would be conquered. Who now will have the hardihood to discuss whether she is higher or lower than man? She is both at once. He is to her as the sky is to the earth; he is above, beneath, and all about her. We were born in her. We live by her. We are encompassed by her. We breathe her into our lungs; she is the atmosphere, the element of our heart.

---

### III.

On three occasions in twenty-five years the idea of this book, of the profound social need to which it should respond, presented itself to me in all its gravity.

The first time, in 1836, before a raging literary flood had swept over us, I desired to write this history. I was then in the flower of middle-age. But the necessary treatises were not yet published. I wrote a few venturesome pages on middle-aged women, and there fortunately stopped.

In 1844, the confidence of youth, and I dare say, the sympathy of every one, surrounded me, in my professor's chair of History and Moral Philosophy. I then saw and knew many things. I became acquainted with the public morals. I felt the necessity of a serious book on Love.

In 1849, when social tragedies broke the hearts of men and women, till the very air was chilled with horror, it seemed as though the blood had all abandoned our veins. In presence of this phenomenon, which imminently threatened an extinction of every kind of life, I appealed to what little of animal warmth still remained to us; I invoked, to the succor of law, the renovation of morals, a purifying of love and of the family.

---

The occasion of 1844 deserves to be remembered.

In gathering together my recollections, and looking over my numerous letters of that time, I see that the singular confidence the public manifested in me arose from the feeling that I was a man abiding in solitude, a stranger to all classes, removed from the quarrels of the day, shut up in thought.

This isolation, however, was not without its drawbacks. In the first place my remarks were not pertinent to the times. Like a near-sighted man, I ran against walls and posts without number. Though I made many trials, I invented old things, which had long before



been discovered and known. In return, I myself remained young. I was worth more than my writings, more than my discourses. I brought to this teaching of philosophy and history a soul as yet entire, a great freshness of mind—under forms often subtle, a true simplicity of heart—in fact, at the very height of the contest, a certain peaceful spirit.

Whence came this? From the fact that, well preserved for my age, knowing man not at all (and books but little), I hated no one. My battles were those of an idea against an idea.

---

This touched the public. They had never met so ignorant a man; that is to say, one who knew so little of what was the town-talk.

Knowing nothing of the theories that had been promulgated, nor of the hackneyed solutions which would have helped me to answer, I was obliged to depend upon myself, to draw from myself, and, having nothing else, to share with the public my life.

This was what they wanted, and they came to me. Many revealed themselves to me, did not fear to show their hidden wounds, to bring to me their bleeding hearts. Men, always defiantly closed against the mockery of the world, opened themselves willingly to me; I never laughed. Ladies, brilliant and worldly, and for that the more unhappy; others pious, studious, austere—ay! even nuns—ignored the fictitious barriers of worldly propriety and opinion, as we do when we are lying ill. Singular, but very precious correspondences these, which I have preserved with the care and respect that they deserve.

I had not gone to the world; the world had come to me. From it I obtained much information. Secrets of our nature, to which I should never have penetrated, were revealed to me in an instant. I learned more of them in a few years than the monotonous spectacle of society's drawing-rooms would ever have taught me. I saw to the very bottom of men's hearts. But, to reply to their appeal, I was obliged also to explore carefully my own, to seek there resources and strength. I cannot boast of having felt no emotion from the habitual contact of so many disordered minds. But even that helped me. The impression I received from them, a real and profound one, was often of itself a remedy. More than one felt himself comforted by the sympathy that he found in me. Failing in other means, I had, in my own emotions, an art without artifice, a moral homœopathy.

I did not blush at being a man.

A country physician, whom I did not know, wrote me one day, that death had taken from him his betrothed whom he was to marry in a week, and that he was in despair. He asked nothing, wanted nothing, except to say to a man whose heart he believed in, "I am in despair."

What could be said, what replied to this? what phrases to find, alas! what consolation to offer, for so terrible a catastrophe? I wished to write to him immediately, however, and I began to do my best. In the midst of this labor, which I felt was worse than useless, interrupting myself to read his letter once more, I experienced such a shock of inconsolable sorrow that the pen dropped from my hand. . . . For it was not

a letter, it was the thing itself, so naïf, so bitter. I saw the whole scene. And my paper was moistened with tears, my letter effaced. But, such as it was, illegible as it was, I sealed it up, and sent it to him.

---

It was my heart, nothing less, that I gave to these people. In return, what did they give me?

At a still early hour of the day, as I am closeted at work, an impetuous young man rushes past the servant at the door, reaches my room, knocks, enters.

"Sir," said he to me, "excuse my abrupt entrance. You will not be vexed, I know, for I am the bearer of news. The proprietors of certain cafés, disreputable houses, and ball-gardens, complain of the effect of your teachings. Their establishments, they say, are losing terribly. The young men have taken to serious conversation, and forget their former habits. . . . In short, they make love elsewhere. . . . These balls are in danger of dying out. All who, until now, have earned their living by providing amusement for students, regard themselves as menaced with a moral revolution, which will ruin them without fail."

I took his hand, and said to him: "If what you tell me is true, I declare to you that it will be a victory and a triumph for me. I desire no other success. When young men become thoughtful, liberty is saved. Let such a result follow our teachings, and I will carry it, Sir, as the crown of my life's efforts, to the grave."

He went away. And, left alone, I said to myself: "I, in return, shall sooner or later make them a present. I will write them the book of enfranchisement from moral servitude, the Book of True Love."

I was very far, at this time, from suspecting the gravity and the difficulty of this grand and profound subject. I was, above all, ignorant of the unforeseen and fresh renewals that love undergoes from age to age. The past weighed me down; the future oppressed me. I was in danger of remaining what I had been until then, an erudite artist.

I wished to liberate the age, and it was the age which was giving liberty to me. These transparent and confiding young minds, which laid themselves open to my gaze, revealed to me many things. They have furnished, without knowing it, a considerable part of the great array of facts from which, little by little, this book has grown.

But nothing has been of more service to me than the friendship of those to whom everything is told—I mean physicians. I have been intimately acquainted with several of the most illustrious of this century. I have been, for ten years, more than the friend, I may say the brother, of an eminent physiologist, who carried with him into the natural sciences an exquisite sense of moral things.

I learned much from him on many subjects, but especially of love.

One thing struck me in this very delicate and gifted man, the systematic perfection of his domestic life. He had a wife, comely but graceful, ignorant but charming (a native of Savoy). He had found means to engage her in his ideas, his researches, and his discoveries.

He worked with no display of instruments, no laboratory, near her and by his fireside—inventing such a reduced and convenient apparatus as to carry on in a

common room experiments, often complicated, which, on a large scale, would have taken him away from home and from his wife, and thus broken up this union and harmony of minds.

A great trial came upon him. His wife, in consequence of a family malady, became insane, and continued so for a year or two. He kept her with him, and continued his labors in the midst of this harrowing distraction.

Her madness was mild enough, but she talked continually. She dreamed wide awake. She was troubled with vain fears. She interlarded all conversation with queer speeches, and hardly permitted you to follow the thread of an idea. Her husband's patience never failed him. One day I expressed my admiration of his conduct. He said to me: "In an asylum, where they would treat her harshly, where they would not put up with her little whims, she would become entirely mad, and would never recover. But well treated, not being startled or frightened, seeing only a friendly face, hearing only connected and sensible words, she will be cured at last, without any other remedy." And so, in fact, it did really happen.

I do not believe that a more remarkable example of affection can anywhere be found. Young men in their first transports for a young and pretty mistress, who has nothing but roses for them, think themselves very far advanced in love. "They would give their life for her." I dare say. Life itself is often easy to give, and to give it is but the affair of an instant; but the persevering gentleness of a well-tried patience, which endures for years the pains of continued interruption, the tranquil

endurance which ceaselessly rectifies, reassures, strengthens a poor, wandering, and diseased mind, possessed by evil dreams, is perhaps a proof of the greatest, of the highest love.

What surprised me more than all was the obedience that he obtained from her as to matters she could not understand. A result of the complete harmony and perfect moral development in which she had lived. With a body very much impaired, a mind utterly bewildered, something still remained in her, surviving all the rest—companionship and the necessity of pleasing; in a word, Love.

I felt assured by this fact, and by others analogous to it, that between the prescribed world of physiologists, and the world, more or less free, wherein moralists abide, is a mixed sphere, which I may call that of voluntary fatality, that is to say, of habits indulged, and free at first, which, through love, become at last a happy necessity and a second nature.

It is the great work of love to create this.

---

A very illustrious writer, who has recently treated these questions, thinks that woman should obey, and believes that she will obey, by the sole fact of her inferior nature.

The lady, of whom I have previously spoken, in her beautiful book, does not consider woman inferior, but still believes in her obeying. Equal? and obeying? How can these words ever go together? She does not sufficiently explain. She vaguely refers to Christian sentiments, to the Bible, to the grace of God.

This is a point more difficult of solution than most people think.

The man should have over the young woman, and the aged woman over the man, a great, a very great ascendancy. But to obtain it, to establish between them the true unanimity, to insure, above all, the keeping alive, the *crescendo*, of this unity of hearts, habit is necessary, a harmony of ways.

And there is a method which leads to this.

The common framework of life has much to do with it, as well as all the forms of mental and material communication. I would say, if the phrase had not already been spoiled in trashy books, that the *art of love* is needed.

I understand the art of love thoroughly. The first steps are far too easy. But, I believe that this art aiding nature, the latter accords to the soul, at every age, and even until death, what I call (in Book v.) the rejuvenescences of love.

I believe that I have effectually suppressed old women. They will no longer be met with.

---

Must I say a word about the arrangement of this work?

It is an insignificant matter, in a book so important in itself, and on a subject, in reality, so new. I have supposed that the reader (interested in the subject, for every man is) would not care much for the style. And I have, accordingly, thought nothing of it.

No literary pretensions here; I have gone on as best I could, "running, swimming, climbing, flying" (to use Milton's words). At times I address myself to all, to the public; often to one alone; often, too, I convey the precept under a narrative form.

For this purpose I have imagined a young couple, whom I marry, and whose life I constantly follow.

Yet this is not a novel. I have not that kind of talent. Besides, the romantic form would have presented the inconvenience of individualizing too much.

My two lovers are anonymous.

Characters with names (like the *Emile* and *Sophie* of Rousseau) do the ideas harm. The reader occupies himself with precisely the useless part of the biography, of the *mise en scène*; he forgets the useful parts, the groundwork and basis of the book. I have preferred to retain the liberty to leave at times this couple, either to speak of the vices of the age, or to state, in my own name, some grave truth, where I feel the need of strongly expressing my convictions and asserting my belief.

Is this to say that my young man, who turns up at all parts of the book, does not exist? Not at all; he does exist. The strongest proof of this is that I am going to speak to him.



#### IV.

If you have been to the museum of the Louvre you may have seen, among the statues there, *The Deliverance of Andromeda*.

This group has been very ill used, having stood under the trees at Versailles for one hundred and fifty years, where it was several times whitewashed, and, moreover,



or, tragically defaced by barbarians, who have destroyed its most delicate beauties. No matter; reconstruct it in your mind's eye, chaste, glowing, breathing, as it came from the feverish hands of Puget. This great artist, in whom dwelt the suffering soul of a depraved age, born in Provence, and having constantly before his eyes the galley-hells of Louis XIV., has, all his life long, sculptured unfortunate prisoners: such as Milo, taken in a tree and devoured by a lion; the pitifully broken-down Atlases of Toulon, and the young Andromeda.

Perseus has just killed the monster who was on the point of devouring her. With unspeakable joy he removes with one finger the heavy iron chains by which the young girl was suspended. Unconscious and nearly dead, she does not know where she is. She does not know who delivers her. She cannot stand, being paralysed by the rude fretting of the chains, and, above all, by fear. She seems thoroughly exhausted. This state of extreme weakness and passive self-abandonment is so much the better for her deliverer. For, after all, she is not dead; her little heart still beats, and for whom it is easy to imagine. With closed eyelids she rests her whole weight upon him. Though closed also, her pretty, quivering lips seem to say: "Take me in your arms and let me rest upon you. I am yours, take care of me. I give myself to you; be my providence, do with me whatsoever you will."

A charmingly impassioned work is this, though absurd in one feature (an additional sign of passion). The artist has been so anxious to excite our pity for Andromeda, that he has made her scarce taller than a child, though she has the form of a woman. She seems of a

different race from her preserver, who is a very tall young man—tall, but not large—a feeble Hercules of the declining days of Rome, easily imagined in the effeminate reign of Louis XIV., but one that would never have been conceived by the robust mind of antiquity.

And yet this admirable man has attained his object. He produces a marvellous effect of love and pity. Whoever gazes upon this statue cannot refrain from exclaiming with emotion, "Oh! how lucky is Perseus! Would I had been there to rescue the little darling!"

---

Fortunate is he who rescues a woman, who frees her from the physical fatalism in which she is held by nature, from the weakness imposed upon her by seclusion, from so much misery, so many drawbacks! Happy he who instructs her, elevates her, strengthens her, and makes her his own! For in delivering her, he also delivers himself.

In this mutual deliverance man must, of course, take the initiative. He is stronger, in better health (especially in not having to endure the great malady of maternity). He has a solid education. He is favored by the laws. He has the best occupations to himself, and earns much more than woman. He is his own master; if not suited in one place, he can go to another. Poor Andromeda, alas! must die on her rock; if she were clever enough to free herself and get away from it, we would say: "She is an adventurer."

But once delivered by you, dear Perseus, from what will she not rescue you in return? Let us enumerate:

From the servitude of your base passions: If your

home is a happy one, you will not go under the smoky lamps of a ball-garden in quest of love, nor to the street for intoxication.

The servitude of weakness: You will not drag your self feebly along, like your pitiful comrade—that young old man, so pale, debased and broken-down, whom the women ridicule. True love will preserve you from this, and concentrate your strength.

The servitude of melancholy: He who is strong and does a man's work, he who in going out to his daily toil leaves at home a beloved creature who loves and thinks of him alone, is by that very fact inspired with cheerfulness, and he is happy all the day.

The servitude of money: Receive for a truth this exact mathematical maxim:—*Two persons spend less than one.*

I see many bachelors who remain such from sheer fright at the expensiveness of matrimony, and yet spend infinitely more than a married man after all. They live very dearly at the *cafés* and restaurants, and at the theatres. Havana cigars, smoked all day, are to their solitude an extravagant necessity.

Why do they smoke? "To forget," they say. Nothing can be more disastrous. *We should never forget.* Woe to him who forgets evils, for he never seeks their antidotes. The man, the citizen who forgets, ruins not only himself but his country. A blessed thing is it to have by your hearth-stone a reliable and loving woman, to whom you can open your heart, with whom you can suffer. She will prevent you from either dreaming or forgetting. We must all suffer, and love, and think. In that is the true life of man.

Some men call themselves bachelors. But are they really so? I have long sought, but I have not yet found that mythical being. I have discovered that everybody is married; some by temporary marriages only, it is true, —secret and shameful these, lasting sometimes for months, sometimes for a week, and often only for an hour. These marriages of hourly duration, which are the utter degradation of the woman, are not effected at a less cost to the man. It is easier to feed a whale than a *Dame aux Camellias*.

If the wife has no female friends whose rivalry incites her to extravagance in dress, she spends almost nothing. She reduces all your expenses to such a degree that the formula given above is no longer correct. We must not say "two persons," but "*four persons spend less than one.*" She supports the two children besides.

When the marriage is judicious, entered into with forethought, when the family does not increase too rapidly, the wife, far from being a hindrance to liberty of action, is, on the contrary, its natural and essential element. Why is it that "the Englishman emigrates so easily, and to so much advantage for England herself?" Because his wife follows him. Except in sickly climates (like India) the Englishwoman, we may say, has sown the whole earth with solid English colonies. It is the strength of the Family which with them has made the power and the grandeur of the nation.

---

Young man, if you have a good wife and a good trade, you are free; I mean by that, that you can go abroad or stay at home, as you please.

If you go, for a time at least (for I cannot conceive

of any one leaving France forever), having a world of love and freedom with you, you will feel great confidence in your own abilities. You will see which way the wind blows, and will say, "The whole earth is mine."

If you stay, freed (by love) from vice and extravagance, you can laugh at the hosts of uneasy millionaires and despise the legions who bow themselves to fate. You will say, "Let them wear out their lives in amassing riches. I love, and in that I have found mine."

---

With an occupation and a wife comes the first accession of freedom. After that come others.

I say an occupation, not a luxurious art. Have an art besides, if you will; and if you have, so much the better. But first, you want an art which is useful to all. Whoever loves and wishes to support his wife, does not indulge his personal pride in this matter, nor does he lose time in seeking the exact line between Art and Trade—a line which is, in reality, fictitious. Who does not see that the majority of trades, if you can analyse them, are legitimate branches of an art? Those of the bootmaker and the tailor, for instance, come very near that of the sculptor. If I may so express myself: for one tailor who understands, copies, and improves upon nature, I would give three classic sculptors.

---

Think of all this, dear friend (whether you are a student at college, or a young workman elsewhere, matters not). Begin now, in your days of rest, to reflect, to prepare and mark out your future life. Make the most of this time; and, if by chance this book fall into your

hands, read a few pages and think. The book has, among other faults, that of being extremely brief. The subject will be resumed by others hereafter, and better handled. When the one who writes this, down deep under the sod shall rest from his labors, one more able than he will take from his imperfect sketch a chapter, and make of it, perhaps, a great, exhaustive, and immortal book. But as all this is to be done with one and the same element (the same in you as in me, love and the heart of man), you can already, even on these dry data, compose for yourself in advance the book of life.

Think of it on Sunday evenings, when the noisy troupe of your thoughtless comrades hammer at your door and say: "Hallo! what are you doing? Are you a bear? Come! we are waiting for you. We are going to la Chartreuse, to la Chaumière, to the Lilas. We are going to take Amanda, Louise, and Jeannette with us."

Answer them thus: "I have something to do now. By-and-by."

If you say that, I assure you that between the two sickly flowers which you are training on your window-sill, languishing in the smoke of Paris, a third will appear, a flower, and yet a woman—the slight and misty image of your future bride.

She is rather young yet. She is perhaps but thirteen years old; you are twenty. She must have time to grow. Still, young as she is, if you devote much of your thought to her, she will guard you better than either your father or your mother. For the little one is very strict; she does not countenance follies of any sort. If any come into your head, she will manage to

say without speaking to you: "No, my love; do not go; stay and work for me."

I give you this charming vision for a guardian and for a Mentor, for a preceptor and a governor. When she is seventeen or eighteen years old, the relations between you will change. As a wife, she will come into your house, and think it very proper and very pleasant for you to become master in your turn.

You will then thank God, whose inventive kindness has made woman for you—woman, the miracle of divine contradiction.

This book will explain her to you by facts, not by hypotheses. She changes, and does not change. She is inconstant and faithful. She goes on, the lights and shades of her gracefulness undergoing a ceaseless change. She whom you loved in the morning is not the same woman at night. An Alsatian nun, it is said, forgot herself for three hundred years in listening to the notes of the nightingale. But whoever could listen to, and look at, a woman in all her metamorphoses, would be always astonished, might be pleased or offended, but never tired. One alone would occupy him two thousand years.

And yet, with all this self-renewing power, such is the force of love, its happy certainty, that the woman is so thoroughly impregnated and imbued with the beloved object, that she becomes herself a part of him.

So that, as they grow in years, she gains in womanly grace. But her solid foundation is of man.

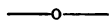
---

Then, if this book be reliable, and if following it step by step, you keep your wife free from exterior influences,

and faithful to her nature, I can here boldly pronounce the phrase which sums up the whole matter: "Do not fear that you will tire of her, for she will ceaselessly change. Do not fear to confide in her, for she will never change."



*BOOK FIRST.*



CREATION OF THE BELOVED.



## I.

### WOMAN.

**THE** object of love, woman, is a being who stands quite alone, and is much more unlike man than would at first appear; even more than differing from, opposed to him, but pleasingly opposed, in a playful and harmonic contest, which constitutes the great charm of this world.

In herself alone, she presents to us another opposition, a struggle of contrary qualities. Elevated by her beauty, her natural poetry, her quick intuition, and divining faculty, (she is not the less held down by nature in the bonds of weakness and suffering.) Every month she wings her flight upward, our poor dear Sybil, and, every month, nature admonishes her by pain, and by a painful crisis returns her to the hands of love.

She does nothing as we do. She thinks, speaks, and acts differently. Her tastes are different from our tastes. Her blood even does not flow in her veins as ours does; at times it rushes through them like a foaming mountain torrent. She does not respire as we do. Making provision for pregnancy and the future ascension of the lower organs, nature has so constructed her that she breathes, for the most part, by the four upper ribs. From this necessity, results woman's greatest beauty, the gently

undulating bosom, which expresses all her sentiments by a mute eloquence.

She does not eat like us—neither as much, nor of the same dishes. Why? Chiefly, because she does not digest as we do. Her digestion is every moment troubled by one thing: she yearns with her very bowels. The deep cup of love (which is called the pelvis) is a sea of varying emotions, hindering the regularity of the nutritive functions.

These internal peculiarities are translated externally by one still more striking. Woman has a language peculiar to herself.

Insects and fish are mute. The bird sings, and would articulate. Man has a distinct tongue, well-defined and explicit words, and a clear tone of voice. But woman, above the man's voice and the bird's song, has a magic language, with which she intermingles this voice or this song: it is the sigh, the impassioned breath.

This is an incalculable power. Though it may but just make itself felt, the heart is at once moved. Her bosom heaves; she cannot speak; and we are won over in advance to everything she wishes. What manly harangue could produce such effect as a woman's silence?

---

## II.

### WOMAN AN INVALID.

OFTEN, seated pensively by the sea-shore, I have watched the first movement, beginning silently, then

palpably increasing until it became fearful, which surged the flood back upon the beach. I have been overwhelmed, absorbed by the potent electricity which danced on the legion of spark-crested waves.

But with how much more of emotion, with what religious and tender respect, have I noted the first signs, light, delicate, and concealed, then violent and painful, of the nervous impressions which periodically announce the flux and reflux of that other ocean, woman!

Besides, these signs are so evident that, even to the eyes of a stranger, they are manifest at the first glance. With some, who seem strong (but who at this time are so much the more weak), a visible agitation, like a tempest, or the approach of a severe illness, commences. In others, who, being more severely attacked, look pale and embarrassed, you can divine something like the destructive agencies of an undermining torrent. In the more common case, the milder influence seems the most salutary; the woman grows younger and renews herself, but always at the cost of suffering, at the cost of that mental uneasiness, which singularly affects her temper, enfeebles her will, and makes quite a new and different person of her, even to him who for a long time has known her best.

The most vulgar woman, at this period, is not without poetry. Long in advance of, and often at the middle of, the lunar month, she gives touching indications of her approaching transformation. Already the wave is coming and the tide rising.

She is agitated or pensive. She has no confidence in herself. By turns, she sheds tears and heaves sighs. Then treat her tenderly, speak to her with extreme con-

sideration, care for her, treat her with attentions, yet abstain from importunity, lest she be made aware of them. Hers is a very defenceless state. She bears within her a power greater than herself, and formidable as a god. She astonishes you with singular speeches, sometimes eloquent, and scarcely to be expected from her. But (except when you have the brutality to irritate her) an increase of tenderness, of love even, overpowers all else. The warmth of the blood quickens the impulses of the heart.

"Is this a physical and fatal love?" you ask. Yes and no. Things pass in an inextricable confusion, and the whole remains an enigma.

---

She loves, she suffers, and needs the support of a loving arm. This, more than anything else, has strengthened love in the human race—firmly established matrimonial union.

It has often been said, that it was the helplessness of the child which, prolonging the cares of education, had created the Family. True, the child does retain the mother, but the man is kept at his fireside by the mother herself, by his tenderness for his wife, and the happiness he experiences in protecting her.

Higher, and yet lower, than man; humiliated by nature, the weight of whose hand she feels heavily upon her; but, at the same time, elevated by dreams, presentiments, and superior intuitions, that man could never have, she has fascinated him, innocently bewitched him forever. He remains enchanted. And this is Society.

An imperious power, a charming tyranny, has pre-

vented his stirring from her side. This ever-renewing crisis, this mystery of love and pain, from month to month, has kept him there. She has deprived him of the power of motion by a single sentence: "I love you still the more when I am sick!"

When she has not the care and oversight of an indulgent mother to humor and spoil her, she requires a kind husband, whom she can abuse in her service. She implores him, she calls upon him, right or wrong. She is excited, timid, cold, has had bad dreams—what not? There will be a storm this evening or to-night; already she feels it coming: "*Do* give me your hand. . . . I do not feel safe."

"But I must go to my work," you answer.

"Return, then, as quickly as you can. I cannot do without you to-day."

They are called capricious. Nothing could be more untrue. They are, on the contrary, very regular, and submissive to the laws of nature. Knowing the state of the atmosphere, the date of the month, and, finally, the influence of these two things on a third, of which I shall speak hereafter, they are able to predict with more certainty than the ancient augurs. You can tell, almost to a certainty, what the woman's humor will be—sad or gay; what turn her thoughts, her desires, her dreams will take.

Of themselves they are very kind, gentle, and considerate to him upon whom they depend for support. Their sharpness, and little fits of anger, are nearly always the results of suffering. That man is a great fool who takes any notice of these. He should rather, at such times, care for her, attend to her, and sympathize with her the more.

Presently, they are themselves again; then they regret these sad moments, excuse themselves often with tears, throw their arms around your neck, and say: "You know it is not my fault."

Is this a transitory state, then? Not at all. Wherever woman does not blot out her sex by excessive labor (like our hardy peasant women, who, at an early age, make men of themselves), wherever she remains a woman, she is generally ailing at least one week out of four.

But the week that precedes that of the crisis is also a troublesome one. And into the eight or ten days which follow this week of pain, is prolonged a languor and a weakness, which formerly could not be defined, but which is now known to be the cicatrization of an interior wound, the real cause of all this tragedy. So that, in reality, 15 or 20 days out of 28 (we may say nearly always) woman is not only an invalid, but a wounded one. She ceaselessly suffers from love's eternal wound.

---

Shakspeare has said: "Pity, under the guise of a little child."

Women will say the poet has said well. At the word "child" their whole heart opens, and is moved to pity.

But, we men, who know more of the truth in this matter, would say that children, so gay and thoughtless, favored by nature in a hundred ways, powerful in their youthful growth and increasing age, know but little pain or sorrow, and do not form the universal symbol of Pity.

Do you ask who the unhappy, really unhappy person, and true image of Pity, is? It is woman, who, in winter, at a certain period of the month, suffering, and fear-



ful of certain prosaic accidents, which often come at the same time, is obliged to display an unfelt gaiety at a ball, in a careless and unsympathizing throng. 19

Alas! where is her mother then? or rather her loving husband, who protects her, works for her, and permits her to remain at night in her comfortable room, by the fire? On such days he should make her retire early, and still keeping watch, would receive for his reward her last whispered word ere she fell asleep: "My God, to you I give my heart, to you and to my husband!"

---

### III.

#### WOMAN SHOULD WORK BUT LITTLE.

REAL workmen, who know that a good start is always important, often all-important, also know that a job which is often interrupted does not amount to much in the end. (Woman, so often interrupted by sickness, is a very bad worker. Her changeable constitution, the constant renewing which forms the basis of her existence, does not permit her to apply herself long to any one thing. To keep her seated in her chair all day would be in the highest degree cruel.

She is not at all adapted for work, when in full health. How much less then when she is *enceinte*, in that great travail of pain, which man so often thoughtlessly entails upon her? During the first four months, when the

## 50      Woman Should Work but Little.

child, still floating about in embryo, agitates her, like the rollings of a vessel in a storm—during the five months of absorption, when he feeds upon his mother and lives on her blood—finally in the three months, at least, necessary to heal her poor, torn viscera, what would you have her do? After this horrible toil, when she has given away the best part of herself, her blood, her marrow, and her very life, are you going to put her to work?

All that the economists and people of that sort have said about woman's fitness for labor, applies to but one exceptional country, imperceptible on the map of the world, forming but a little black spot on that of Europe. They have left the rest of the world out of consideration!

In all countries, and in all times, woman has been and is now occupied only with domestic labors, which, among savages (where the warrior reserves himself for the greater fatigues of the chase), includes a little agriculture or gardening.

And it is in doing little or nothing that woman produces the two greatest treasures of this world. What are they? The child, the man, the beauty and the strength of race. What else? The flower of man, the flower of arts, of gentleness, and of humanity, which we call Civilization. All this has come, from the beginning, of the delicate, kind, and patient culture that woman, in her functions as a wife and a mother, has given us.

Woman is no more idle than we are, though she acts in a very different manner. I know some who work twelve hours a day, and yet do not know that they are **working**. One of the most industrious of these once

•

said to me modestly: "I live like a princess. He does the work and supports me. Women are good for nothing."

This "nothing" means a light, slow, interrupted and voluntary work, always having in view those whom she loves, her husband or her child. This work, which does not absorb her mind, is like the woof to the web of her thoughts. She weaves upon it the household matters which the man, engaged in his business, had not thought about; often, too, serious dreams about the future of her children; and sometimes a higher and more universal poetry of humanity and charity.

Some one asked the illustrious and charming Mrs. Stowe under what circumstances she had written *Uncle Tom's Cabin*. "While I was keeping the pot boiling," she replied.

Woman's work must always partake of love, for she is fit for nothing else. What is her natural aim, her mission? First, to love; second, to love but one; third, to love always.

And we may add: to love always to the same degree, without ever tiring. When the world does not come, to unsettle her, and change her, woman is more faithful than man. She loves very equally, in a continued course which is stopped by nothing, which flows on like a rivulet or a river—like a certain beautiful and solitary spring in the Black Forest, of which, passing by there in July 1841, I asked what her name was. She answered: "I call myself, *Forever*."

---

#### IV.

#### THE MAN SHOULD EARN ENOUGH FOR BOTH.

YOUR poor little wife is yet asleep. It would be a great pity to wake her, for you see by the expression of her face that her dream is a pleasant one. It is of love; so it must be of you. It is only five o'clock. Besides, it is well that she should lie abed, especially at this time of the month, and sleep a little later in the morning. Now, if we could only find out the meaning of that smile upon her lips! What is she thinking about, or what does she wish?

"I do not know." Then I will tell you: "I am wholly thine, and in thee I live."

This is very simple, and yet it has a world of meaning. A complete revelation, the whole formula of nature, the marriage creed itself, is contained in those words.

"My love," she says, "I am not strong, nor good for much else but to love and care for you. I have not your muscular arms, and, if I devote myself too long to a complicated piece of work, the blood rushes to my head, and I have a ringing in my ears. I cannot invent anything; I cannot take the lead in anything. Why? Because I always wait for you, and look entirely through your eyes."

"In you alone reside the impulse, the energy, and also the patient and inventive power which leads to execution. Then you shall be the creator, and make me a nest with your talents and your strength."

"A nest! ay, and more than a nest—a harmonic world; a world of order, and kindness, and peace; a city of refuge, where I shall see no more suffering, where I shall have nothing more to wish for, where the felicity of all shall crown my own. For of what use, you know, would this place of refuge be, if I were the only happy person in it? If I were an object of pity there, I should almost hate my happiness."

Now that she has spoken, let us try to formulize her thought, or rather her law; yes, for it is the law of Love.

"In the name and on behalf of Woman, ruler over all the earth, Man is commanded to transform the World, to make it the abode of justice, peace, and happiness, and to reproduce Heaven here below."

"And what will she give me in return?" Herself. In proportion to your heroism, will her heart be enlarged to you. Make, you, a paradise for others; she knows how to make yours.

---

It is the paradise of marriage that the man shall work for the woman; that he alone shall support her, take pleasure in enduring fatigue for her sake, and spare her the hardships of labor, and rude contact with the world.

He returns home in the evening, harassed, suffering from toil, mental or bodily, from the weariness of worldly things, from the baseness of men. But in his reception at home there is such an infinite kindness, a calm so intense, that he hardly believes in the cruel realities he has gone through all the day. "No," he says, "that could not have been; it was but an ugly

## 54     Man Should Earn Enough for Both.

dream    There is but one *real* thing in the world, and that is *you* !”

This is woman’s mission (more important than generation even), to renew the heart of man. Protected and nourished by the man, she in turn nourishes him with love.

x |     In Love is her true sphere of labor, the only labor that it is essential she should perform. It was that she should reserve herself entirely for this, that nature made her so incapable of performing the ruder sorts of earthly toil.

Man’s business it is to earn money, her’s to spend it: that is to say, to regulate the household expenditures, better than man would.     •

This renders him indifferent to all enjoyment that is bought, and makes it seem to him insipid. Why should he go elsewhere in quest of pleasure? What pleasure is there apart from the woman whom he loves?

It is well said in Eastern law, that “the wife is the household.” And better still said the Eastern poet: “A wife is a fortune.”

Our western experience enables us to add: “Especially when she is poor.”

Then, though she has nothing, she brings you every thing.



V.

SHOULD THE BELOVED BE RICH OR POOR ?

SHE should be gentle, trusting, willing to be guided, and above all, fresh in heart.

All the rest is of trifling consideration.

---

To commence with that which most affects people now-a-days, money, I must say that I have never seen a rich bride who was in any way tractable. It is not long before she begins to display inordinate pretensions, and claim the right of spending her marriage-portion, and even more. So that the man who thought his fortune made, soon finds himself reduced to poverty, and obliged to plunge into the quicksands of speculation.

Twelve years ago, I set up this axiom, which every day acquires additional verification. "If you wish to ruin yourself, marry a rich wife."

---

There is even a greater danger than of losing your fortune, it is that of losing your former self, of changing the habits which have made you what you are, which have given you all your force and originality. In what is called a good marriage, you become something like a hanger-on to a woman, a sort of prince-consort, or queen's husband, as it were.

A beautiful, a very beautiful widow, all amiability and goodness, said to some one: "Sir, I have fifty thousand livres a year, and quiet and unworldly habits. I love

## 50 Should the Beloved be Rich or Poor ?

you and will obey you. . . . You are my old friend ; tell me if I have a fault." " You have but one, madame ; you are rich."

---

" Is it then a crime to be rich ?"

α | No. All that is here meant to be conveyed is, that the woman who marries a man poorer than herself is rarely willing to be guided by him. She will not adopt his ideas, his ways of living, and his habits ; she will impose her own upon him. If she do not succeed in turning the man into a woman, disputes will arise. The sweet and imperceptible blending of two lives into one will not take place. (The grafting of the wife upon the husband will be impossible ; there will be no marriage, in fact.) On the contrary, when the wife is the poorer of the two, she is rich in amiability. She loves and trusts ; and these are not trifles. But are these all ? No ; a third something is wanted, and this she cannot always give. She must *understand* the man whom she loves.

When there is too great a distance between the two, of position and education, when there are many social barriers to be surmounted to bring our couple together, the danger is imminent. In such a case much more time, tact, and patience will be required than a business man has always at his disposal. At some time or other you may see a young country girl, well-born, and a perfect flower of beauty, goodness, and virtue, exquisitely pure, loving, gentle, and obedient. Make love to her, marry her, and you are sadly surprised when you realize the difficulty of making yourself understood by her. She does her best ; she listens to your words and desires to



## Should the Beloved be Rich or Poor? 57

profit by them; she gives herself wholly up to you. And yet all this does not help the matter. She has not the power of concentrating her attention. Her excess of blood troubles her, too; country people, when taken away from their rude toil, are painfully overcharged with blood. She feels all this, only too well. She weeps, and is vexed with herself "for being so stupid." She is not stupid at all. She is even very intelligent about things coming within the province of her capabilities. The fault is not hers, but yours—you who believed that the few initiative steps could be so easily taken.

This young country girl could and should have married a thriving mechanic of the neighboring city. And the daughter who would have come of this marriage, already one degree finer, in point of class, than her mother, and also the recipient of a better education, might have married a man of letters; she could at once have followed and understood him in everything without difficulty. It would have been a marriage of minds also.

Will it always be thus? No; quite the contrary, I hope. Classes, as well as races, are continually changing. All old barriers will fall before the omnipotent vindicator, the grand-master of equality, Love.

## VI.

## SHOULD YOU CHOOSE A FRENCH WOMAN?

It is not enough to love, nor even to understand each other. You must give back something in return for what is given, sparkle for sparkle, thought for thought. On this account, so far as nationality goes, I should prefer the French woman to all others in the world.

The German woman is all love and gentleness, full of child-like purity, which transports one to Paradise. The English woman, chaste, exclusive, thoughtful, and absorbed in her home affections, so loyal, so firm, and so gentle, is the ideal of a wife. The passion of the Spaniard bites deep into the heart; and the Italian, in her beauty and softness, her warm imagination, often with her touching frankness, renders resistance impossible, and you are enraptured, conquered.

However, if you desire a wife whose soul shall respond to your own by the sympathy of intellect as well as love—who shall renew your heart by a charming vivacity and gaiety, a helping wit, womanly words or bird-like songs—you must choose a Frenchwoman.

---

One thing to be remembered is, that they are very precocious. A French girl at fifteen is as well developed, as to her person and her passions, as an English girl is at eighteen. This is to be attributed to her Catholic education, and confession, which is so instrumental in the forcing of young girls. Music, which is cultivated so assiduously

among us, has also a great influence. The English girl is likewise instructed in it, but for her it is only a task. The Italian and the German women love music for its own sake. But, for the French woman, it is Love in the form of art. When love comes, music is quite dismissed; the piano, to which she devoted so much time, is utterly forgotten.

---

Generally speaking, the young French girl has neither the dazzling complexion, nor the visible purity, the touching and virginal charm, of the German girl. With us, both sexes, for a season, are visited with a certain barrenness. Our children are precocious, have ardent, scorching blood in their veins. We are not born young in France, but we become so afterwards. The French woman is wonderfully beautified by marriage, while the Northern virgin loses by it, and often fades.

You risk very little in marrying a plain woman in France. She is most frequently so simply for want of love. When she is loved, she becomes quite another person; you would scarcely recognise her.

---

## VII.

### WOMAN REQUIRES STABILITY AND COMPLETENESS IN LOVE.

WOMAN takes hardly any interest in the vain discussions which are carried on in her name at the present day. She troubles herself very little about the famous

α / inconsistent debate, whether she is superior or inferior to man. The theory of the case is, with her, quite a secondary consideration. Wherever she proves herself thoughtful, clever, and prudent, there she is mistress; she manages the household, directs the business, keeps the money, arranges everything.

α / Will she obey? At this question you fancy she will resist. Not at all; she merely laughs and shakes her head. She knows perfectly, in her own heart, that the better she obeys the surer she is to govern.

What is it, after all, that woman desires most profoundly? What is her most secret wish—the indistinct yet instinctive thought which follows her, without her being able to account for it, into all places and at all times—the thought which fully explains her apparent contradictions, her prudence and her folly, her fidelity and her inconstancy?

She wishes to be loved, without doubt; but that answer does not by any means fathom the uttermost depths of her desires.

α / She wishes sensual pleasure. Yes, but in a very small degree. In her capacity of invalid she is prudent and abstinent, more loving yet purer than we are.

Then she desires most to reign at home, to be the mistress of the house, mistress in her bed, mistress by her fireside, at her table, in all her little world. "This," says the ancient Persian, and says Voltaire in his *Tales*, "is what pleases woman above every other thing." That, to be sure, is true; but it may be explained by a deeper sentiment, to which the three preceding considerations are in a great measure related.

The secret, essential, capital, and fundamental idea is,

that every woman feels herself to be a powerful centre of love and attraction, around which everything should revolve. She wants man to envelop her with an insatiable desire—a never-ending curiosity. She has a confused consciousness that her nature affords an infinity of discovery; that she possesses the power of fully satisfying the persevering love which would pursue this endless search—that she would surprise it for ever by a thousand unexpected visions of grace and passion.

This obstinacy of love, this effort of ardent curiosity, which seeks the infinite in a single being, implies a thoroughly pure, exclusive, and monogamic home-circle. Nothing is less genial than a harem; it is the abode of a caterpillar-love, which crawls from rose to rose, spoiling the edges of the petals without ever reaching the cup.

Woman, in all history, is the mortal enemy of polygamy. She wishes for the love of one only; but it must be real love—an eager, restless passion, which, like a flame, burns on and must burn on. She never pardons the chosen possessor who examines so little into the value of his treasure as to stupidly think, the day after the wedding, that he has no more to discover.

Hence come the deplorable attempts of a creature naturally very faithful, and who would have always remained so, to find elsewhere a soul which desires to know more of her own, to dive deeper into it and discover a greater happiness. In this she never succeeds. The lover, like the husband, only skims over the surface of the deep cup, and neither of them knows that the treasure lies at the bottom.

Man has desire; woman love. He has invented hundreds of creeds, and founded polygamic institutions.

He wished to gratify his sensuality, and have his name live longer in the land; so he first sought pleasure, and then perpetuity by a numerous family. Woman has wished for nothing but to love, to give herself to one, and to belong to him for ever.

How great is love in woman! and great, too, her resistance to the polygamic impurity which men sought to thrust upon her as a duty! In the Mahabharat of India, she wishes to love but one; she is punished for it; she dies. In the Zend-Avesta of the Persians, summoned by the Magi to tell what woman most desires, she asks for a veil, and covering her face therewith, says: "To be loved, to be studied by her husband, and to be mistress of the house." This beautiful answer displeases her judges; she is stricken down, and dies. But her soul, winging its flight to heaven, exclaims: "I am pure and undefiled."

One very remarkable thing, in these ancient revelations of woman's heart, is that love always appears, but the thought of generation never.

In love she sees but love, her lover, her husband; the child will come by and by. It is man who troubles himself about the perpetuation of his race.

A young and thoughtful lady (Madame de Gasparin) has had the courage to touch upon this delicate point, and to reveal woman's secret: "*The object of marriage is marriage*; the child is but an auxiliary. Conjugal love requires more self-sacrifice, more virtue, than maternal love; for the child is but a continuation of the mother; in loving it the mother loves herself."

She has said this simply, innocently, boldly. She did not

ask for a veil like the Persian matron, feeling herself sufficiently protected by her virtue, and that noble maiden hood which the wife never loses.

A very pure avowal is the above, and one which in reality pleads for the interests of the child—one also which the child, could he speak before he is born, would make himself. What the child has most to wish for, is the preliminary unity of those from whom he is to spring. If they are in perfect communion of heart, he may come; his home is ready, a soft nest is open to receive him. If, at his advent, he found divorce threatening the marriage of his parents, he would perish morally, and perhaps physically. So, every question of family, education, etc., is subordinate to a previous consideration—that of love, and the mutual identification of the two who love, and who, little by little, come to form but one.

---

This is woman's thought, divested of all hypocrisy, and in its sacred gravity put in opposition to the idea, obtaining in the Middle Ages, that the sole end of marriage was procreation, forgetting that the mother, before being a mother, is the wife and the companion of man.

This argues profound ignorance. They did not know that woman, even she who has no child, is prolific in a hundred different ways. She is so to her husband, into whose nature even the simplest woman instils, imperceptibly, sentiments, thoughts, and habits in the end. At all times, when fatigued, and having exhausted or lost his mental vigor, man takes in a new supply from woman, from her soothing presence, her chaste bosom.

She is his daughter, in that he finds in her both youth

and freshness. She is his sister, in that she takes the lead on the roughest road, and, weak herself, supports him. She is his mother, since she ever throws her mantle about him. In his darker moments, when he is in trouble, and seeks in vain his star in the heavens, he looks towards woman, and behold! that star is in *her* eyes!

---

We must not let the present state of morals, the public vertigo, and unchecked whirlwind of licence which we have now before our eyes, deceive us as to the essence of things; we must not stop at certain women, or classes, or times. We must look at the eternal woman.

In all history she is the element of stability. Common sense sufficiently explains the reason of this. It is not only because she is the mother, the embodiment of the family and the household, but because she brings into the co-partnership a disproportionate share, which becomes enormous when compared to that of the man. She enters into it entirely, and without the possibility of withdrawal. The simplest one among them fully understands that any change is to her disadvantage, that in changing she rapidly lowers herself; that, in going from the first man to the second, she loses a hundred per cent. What is it then when she leaves him for a third? What will it be when she reaches the tenth? Alas! . . . .

When the parts are transposed, when the woman grows fickle and calls for change, which is her degradation and her ruin, we must consider it a case of disordered mind, a hideous symptom of misery and despair. This perversion of woman's nature condemns her less than it does him who causes the evil—for the crime is really man's.

The astonishing aspect of restlessness and agitation



which we now behold in their mania for dress, results less from real frivolity than from rivalry and vanity; frequently also from chagrin at their youth and beauty slipping away, and their consequent desire to renovate themselves every morning.

These surprising changes of decoration are very frequently the caprices of an ailing heart, which wants to retain a love, and finds it difficult to do so. Some of the most faithful among them, in order to retain their lovers, work incessantly at disguising and varying themselves. They would do precisely the same in the midst of the greatest solitude, in a desert, or an Alpine hut, if they lived there with "him."

Do they employ the right means to attain their end? I think not. The impressions received upon the heart are rather unsettled than strengthened by this continual change. You are tempted to say to them: "My love, do not change so rapidly. Why force my faithful heart into a permanent infidelity? Yesterday you were so lovely! I had already begun to be fascinated by that beautiful woman. And to day where is she? Already disappeared. . . . Ah! how I regret her absence! Give her back to me. Do not force me to love change so."

Dress is a great symbol. There should be some novelty, but nothing violent; above all, never so complete a novelty as to cause love to lose its reckoning. A slight accessory to the costume gracefully varies it, and suffices for all change. A flower more or less, a ribbon, a bit of lace, a mere nothing, often enchants us, and the whole portrait becomes transfigured. This changeless change goes to the heart and silently says: "Always different, and always the same."

## 66      Woman Requires Stability, &c.

The follies and passing epidemics of luxury and fashion do not at all, so far as we are concerned, affect what we have, in the universality of time and place, set down as the essential law of woman's heart, and of the depths of her nature.

What she wants is not love merely, but the fixity, the passionate perseverance, the unlimited eagerness and curiosity, the endless intensity of love.

She wants this and she has a right to it; for to such ardent researches she could reply for ever, with the fresh and inexhaustible eloquence (improvisation) of unlooked-for happiness.

---

Two speeches of a comedy, which may have been regarded as trifles, appear to me to merit attention. They are these.

LADY.—Will your master really love me?

VALET.—Ah! Madam, he has sworn that as fast as you renew your attractions he will renew his love.

But the lady might have replied: "And why shouldn't he?" If he is faithful—not stupidly faithful, with a monotonous constancy, but with an inventive love—insatiably curious to better understand the woman he loves, the latter, rich as the sea, liberal as the electric machine is of its sparks, can surpass all his expectations. In her is the bright rainbow of the graces of attachment, of the desires which embellish, or the refusals which attract. What limits are there to her power? None, but those of Nature, and she is Nature's self.

---

VIII.

YOU MUST CREATE YOUR WIFE—SHE HERSELF DESIRES NOTHING BETTER.

THE girl of eighteen will be willingly the daughter—that is to say, the docile spouse—of the man of twenty-eight or thirty.

She trusts to him in everything, easily believes that he knows more than she, and all the world besides—more than her father and mother (whom she quits with tears, but without inconsolable sorrow). She believes everything he tells her, and confiding her body and soul to him, she is very far from discussing any differences of opinion which may in reality separate them; unconsciously, also, she even yields him her faith.

She believes that she is beginning—she wishes to begin—a totally new life, which shall have nothing in common with her former life. She desires to be born again, with him and of him. “Let this day,” she says, “be the first of my days. Your creed is my creed. Your people shall be my people, and your God my God.”

This is an admirable moment for the man, in which he can exercise a most powerful influence. His be the task to make that influence an enduring one.

He should do as she wishes, and take her at her word; he should re-make, re-new, re-model, *re-create* her.

Deliver her, therefore, from her insignificance, from all that hinders her from becoming an intellectual being from all evil precedents, from any faults of education or association she may have.

It is her interest, moreover, and the interest of your love. Do you know why she wishes to be renewed by you? Because she intuitively knows that you will love her the more, and with an ever increasing love, if you make her yours and a part of yourself.

Take her, then, as she offers herself, to your heart, and in your arms, like a loving little child.

---

She feels—she knows by the power of feminine intuition—that love, in these modern times, loves not *what it finds*, but *what it makes*.

We are workmen, creators, manufacturers, the true sons of Prometheus. We do not want a ready-made Pandora; we prefer to make one for ourselves.

This is proof that these latter days, which we believe to be cold and heartless, are like to produce instances of a force of love, of a revival of ardor and passion, unknown to by-gone ages.

Old-time passion for a monotonous ideal was almost still-born at the outset; it soon became indifferent to what was not its own work. But our modern passion for a progressive being, for a living, loving creation, which we fashion ourselves, hour by hour, for a beauty which is truly our own, which increases in proportion to our own power, is the source of an inexhaustible flame. So it will be in all cases, whether light or serious, so always, so everywhere. It will be like the immense sheets of flame which smoulder beneath the surface of certain provinces of China; you have but to strike the ground at any point, dig a little hole, and the flame bursts forth.

IX.

AM I FIT TO CREATE A WOMAN?

THIS is the timid objection that more than one will make. Such men, though vain otherwise, here confess their weakness. The difficulty, the importance of the work, overpowers them.

To love her a little, seems to them all very well; to enjoy her for a single night, very well also; but the assiduous and persevering culture of her soul intimidates them; they draw back in dismay.

"I am not prepared for that," they say. "Already impaired by the life I have led, by a rigorous bringing-up, and by the violent reaction in the course of pleasure which followed it, I do not feel worthy to take this maiden in hand, to mould this young loving heart, which calls me to be its creator, its earthly god. Have I enough intelligence, alas! enough of love even? Have I retained the faculty of love?"

But you must not despise nor distrust yourself thus; with will and perseverance you can accomplish great things yet, both in life and in love. This ill-spent past which haunts you, was not love. You are not yet able to conceive of the true love. The faculty slumbers in you, but it still exists; it was reserved for you by God. Even the prostitute is susceptible of it. The deeper the abyss, the more ardent Heaven's desire to lift you up from it.

---

If you were to live with your young bride, seeking

in her nothing but the gratification of passion, your heart would soon fail you; ennui would come between you and her. But with you such a thing is impossible; see how confidently she gives herself up to you, in order to become part of yourself! This work of transformation, this sweet blending of your natures, will preserve in your union the ardor of its first day, will even increase that ardor. How can you help loving her more, when you feel yourself better and purer in her? when ceaselessly from her pure heart are reflected the rays of your primitive nature, of the beautiful young light which shone over your cradle, which had become overcast in you, but which she, your guardian angel, reflects upon you again more beautiful than before?

Do not then, when she comes to you of her own accord, do not be so foolish as to hesitate and say (with cowardly and culpable humility): "I am not worthy." You have no right to say so. There is no middle-course, no mediocrity in marriage. He who does not take firm and powerful possession of his wife, is neither respected nor beloved by her. He wearies her; and between weariness and hate, with women, there is but a step. She lives apart from him, her minor self at least; and not only she, but the children, the whole family, become estranged.

---

You ask what right you have thus to take possession of her. I will tell you:

The first and principal title to your claim is the deep-felt happiness which, on contracting marriage, she herself feels in being able to say, "I am yours."

She feels free, provided that you are her master. Freed from what, do you ask? Freed from her mother

who, though loving her all the while, treats her up to twenty years of age, and would treat her up to thirty, exactly like a little girl. French mothers are terrible. They adore their daughters, but they wage continual war against them, eclipsing them by the brilliancy, the charm, and the force of their own individuality. They are much more graceful, often prettier even, and always younger, much younger, than their daughters. So long as the daughter is under the control of her mother, she has the mortification of hearing the men say every night among themselves: "The little one is not so bad, but she does not compare with her mother."

Rich or poor, the mother diets herself and her daughter altogether too much. But the mother, who is all grace, wit, and sparkle, has no need of bloom. With the daughter, it is different; low diet keeps her pale, sickly, and a little thin. The poor young girl too often prolongs the "ungrateful age," up to the very day of her wedding. Then at last, happy in you, she assumes a graceful outline; she will owe her beauty to you; if you are careful of her, if you tenderly but firmly wrap her up in your love, your young rose will blossom, fresher and more lovely than in her melancholy youth.

To become beautiful, and through love—what happiness! I dare not attempt to describe to you the excess of her gratitude. To be beautiful is Heaven; and to woman, it is everything. If she but know that it is to you she owes so great an advantage, she will readily yield on every other point; she will be delighted to feel that you are the master; she will like you to decide everything, and in general, to save her the trouble of having a will of her own.

## 72      Am I Fit to Create a Woman ?

She will cheerfully grant, what is the truth, that you are her guardian angel; that your ten or twelve additional years, your experience of the world, have taught you a thousand things from which you can preserve her, a thousand dangers to which her youth and the semi captivity of her girlhood would have blinded her, and into which, most likely, she would have rushed headlong.

Take an example: Though the daughter has often desired to be freed from her mother's authority, she nevertheless is grieved at the moment of parting. "Why not all live together, my dear?" she asks of her husband. And the wish often comes from her very heart. The husband knows, better than she, that nothing could be more fatal to the happiness of all, that a life of discord and trouble would be the result.

"But," she continues, "if I could only have my nurse, who loves me so, who is so clever, my Julia! There is none who can dress me as well as she!" Here again, it is the husband who guards her from a danger. He succeeds in not having her bring to their new home the cunning and compliant *femme de chambre*, who humors the wife, and would be the real rival of the husband, flattering him openly, and secretly influencing the wife against him, the dangerous confidante of her little griefs, and gradually becoming the mistress, the true mistress, of the house. Fortunately the young man foresees all this, and induces his bride to dispense with the alluring viper.

These are very important points, on which there is often some little disagreement. Sometimes she even turns aside to weep, though acknowledging the while



that, after all, you have more experience, that you are undoubtedly right.

If you carry your point in these matters, you are sure of all the rest. In business, where the interests of both are concerned, in matters of opinion, she readily acknowledges that you know and see more and better than she does—above all, that your habits of mind are very different, stronger, and more serious.

The mere fact of having an occupation, a speciality, is a great advantage to the man. He must have passed through a previous course of moral gymnastics, must have overcome the stiffness of his joints, broken, trained, and strengthened his active faculties. It is in conquering a trade that we conquer ourselves. Herein we especially learn that, to succeed, to bring any undertaking to an end, perseverance is required; and not only that, but conscientiousness, a firm desire to do right, and an incalculable precision. Women would be capable enough of this precision, yet they seldom possess it, because their wills are not strong enough.

---

You must know, too, that, being young, the woman is easily fatigued, often troubled by an excess of blood.

Those modest and charming roses, so often visible on her cheeks, are an ornament; but an obstacle, nevertheless. They render her incapable of continued application. And this beloved woman, if you permitted it, would be only too willing to throw herself upon you, and say: "Think for both of us," like a child, who, tired after a dozen steps, wants his mother to carry him. But you must not allow this. You must help and sustain the indolent beauty, without relieving her of the necessity of walking.

## 74      Am I Fit to Create a Woman?

It is now or never, my friend, that you will have an opportunity of knowing whether you are a man of good sense or not. This cherished child-wife unwittingly propounds to you the most trying problem. How will you give up the scholastic pursuits in which you have been educated? How can you bring these rigid exact sciences, in their pure crystal state, back to life, and make flowers of the diamonds, to give to your child?

This is a great and beautiful problem. How difficult! and yet for you how useful! Without it you would never have known that you fully comprehended, that you were master of all this learning deposited in you, but not assimilated with you, not infused into your being. But, henceforth, you will know this perfectly, when science becomes so mingled with the hottest blood in your veins, and passes, burning its way, through your heart, and your love.

I have placed myself out of the possibility of all dispute. My heart is too full of this to allow me to turn aside and reply, to those who seek, plausibly enough, to discourage you by saying that modern science, having as yet but little unity, cannot thus be brought down to a vital simplicity, in which it can be transmitted to the uneducated woman, to a child.

A word here will suffice:

Modern reason has but two component parts:

*The science of life*, which is that of love, and teaches us of the universal life—our common parentage, and the fraternity of man.

*The science of justice*, which is the highest charity, and impartial love. This is fraternity also.

Are these two separate things then? No; there is

out one. These two great churches of God, which we have been building for the last three hundred years, unite at the top; they have a common spire, and blend in one near heaven.

The more Law has ennobled and humanized itself, the more have the brotherhood of Justice gone forth to meet the brotherhood of Nature, and of Medicine, the science of life, of love and of mercy. (See notes.)

This is modern science, common and uniform to both sexes. You penetrate to it by justice and truth, order and harmony. And *she*, your young pupil, is conscious of it through mercy and gentleness. Both of you through love.

---

Young man, you wish to be loved, do you not? Well! for that you must be a *man*. I mean that, above the necessary devotion to the details of business, you must preserve a reverence for humanity at large, the love of all. It is thus that you will be worthy of being loved yourself—great, noble, and having power over the woman, who is herself but love and life.

If you are studying law, for example, go on Sunday evening to the church of Nature; I mean to the *Jardin des Plantes*. Let your friend, the young medical student, take you to the dissecting table, and teach you what death is.

And if you are a physician, pause occasionally in your career. You are seeing too much pain. Learn the social causes of it. Inform yourself, in your spare moments, of the great therapeutics of Equity and Civil Order, which would empty these hospitals, of that Justice which would cure by the diffusion of happiness.

## 76      Am I Fit to Create a Woman ?

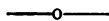
On this ground, my friend, you are sure to be understood, for your wife is all pity, affection, and trust.

And what delight does she take in believing you when you come to her with your heart full of so many new, refreshing, and touching truths! What a striking contrast is here offered. Your maiden, your bride of sixteen summers, your fresh and blooming rose, presents to you the effects of a Byzantian education—a mind, old and decayed, wrinkled with the ideas of the Middle Ages. You, on the contrary, the man of modern times, fresh in intellect, in learning, in conceptions, go to her new and strong, in the dazzling heyday of youth. Here is work for the incredible power of love; and what happiness will it not procure you!

By an innocent error, caused by her affection and gratitude, she ascribes and credits to you all that has been effected by the increased intelligence of the age. She loves you for Linnæus, and for the mystery of flowers. She loves you for the stars in heaven, as they were first seen by Galileo. She loves in you even the science of Death, which has taught us the profound secret of love, and, in opposition to the barbarous impiety of the Gothic times, has told us: "Woman is pure."

Be resigned to this, my friend. It is from you that everything comes. You have the credit of everything. It is you who have made all living things, all science. She, indeed, dares not think thus, but her Love thinks it for her; for, being her creator, you are also the creator of the world; the world and God are both lost in you.

*BOOK SECOND.*



INITIATION AND COMMUNION.



## I.

### LOVE IN A COTTAGE.

LOVERS' follies are worthy of attention. Wise men should not despise the sayings of fools. Lunatics at times have uttered oracles.

Listen to this young man who for the first time, in May, is walking with his timid and affianced bride in the country. The parents follow behind, but not too near. The lover seems to appeal to all nature, to heaven, and to earth, to share with him his great joy. But heaven, and earth, and, I must add, even his betrothed, all seem to disappear in a new transport. What is it that he has seen? A rustic cottage.

"Ah!" he exclaims, "that is the desire of my heart! Small and solitary, it is the very home I have dreamed of for you and me. Here, why may we not live together, ramble thus together, escape from society and its impure associations, and seal this Paradise of ours with mystery, and forgetfulness of the world!"

Young man, you are not so silly after all. That common laborer's cottage is undoubtedly too rude a dwelling-place for your delicate companion; but your instinct at least reveals to you one thing that many others do not learn until long afterward, and then to their bitter cost:

## Love in a Cottage.

"Do not sow seed by the roadside.  
Do not plant trees in the torrent.  
Do not love amid the crowded haunts of men."

---

What influence can you have over a woman in society?  
None at all.

In solitude? Every influence.

---

Besides, it is not she, perhaps, whom you must guard thus, but yourself. The more solitary she is, the more you live with her, the more your hearts are blended. But so soon as she has any society, even the best, that of her mother, her sister, or a female friend for instance, you feel less fear in leaving her, and the bond between you is in danger of being loosened. "Her mother is with her," you say; "I will go and see my friends. She will go with her sister; I can pay such and such a visit now."



This is *not* what I mean. I hope for quite a different society, pure, free, and strong, where the table of manly companionship shall reserve its place of honor for the wife, the mother, and the maiden ; where, at public festivals, we shall see our charming women seated, crowned with flowers, on the stand with the magistrates. Woman, queen over the multitude, the delicate yet strict arbiter of public morals, will be the most delightful feature of future communities.

All this is yet far distant perhaps. Let me then, in the meantime, speak of possible and practical things, those which alone we need now.

---

The solitude that I would wish for woman is not immurement in the house of the jealous old Arnolphe, who keeps continual watch and ward over Agnes, the body of Agnes at least, while stifling her heart and suffering her mind to stagnate.

In the first place I would wish Agnes to have a husband, of an age suitable to her own. I have before given the proportion : twenty-eight years in the man to eighteen in the woman. To depart from this rule there will need to be very special affinities between you, very singular and very rare, too ; these may be found, but seldom are.

I wish Agnes to have complete liberty. If woman is born feeble, and subservient to suffering, love is her redemption, marriage her successful enfranchisement. Herein she becomes equal to the man, often superior in the end.

"And her height, pry'thee?"

"Just as high as my heart."—SHAKESPEARE.

Solitude, besides, is entirely relative. Love is a thing so mighty that it prevails over all circumstances. It can live solitary even in the greatest crowd. It is pure and wholesome even when it rages most fiercely. To it a palace, a garret, a throne, a shop, are all one. Remember, however, that it does not wage successful war against the troubles of this world except when it is aided by an honest heart, industrious habits, and a succession of labors which beneficially occupy every hour of one's life

Who has not seen, in the darkest and dreariest corner of Paris (*Rue des Lombards*, if my memory serves me right), a beautiful woman, born very wealthy, who, despite her finished education and her great fortune, passes her life in a counting-house? There, in a little glass-panelled office, she writes and keeps accounts, gives orders to and oversees a score of clerks. This woman is alone among so many men, not as an employee, but as mistress. Her young husband is away all day, conducting the outside business of the house. In the evening they meet again. Madame shuts her books, sends away her clerks, and goes up-stairs to her husband. No union is stronger than this, no marriage happier. The husband adores rather than loves his wife. That dismal shop is the same to them as a rustic cottage.

---

If, however, you will permit me to form a wish for you, it is that your young wife, that poetic creature who has enslaved your heart, shall be less occupied with invoices and bills payable, and that you, yourself, be not exiled from her all the day long. The union, in the case cited, is strong and beautiful; but is it enduring? Is it not something like the partnership of two men of busi-

ness? Is there true blending of hearts between two persons who are engrossed in business? Even in bed, as the chaste and worthy spouse sinks back upon her pillow, she murmurs between two sighs: "Do not forget, my love, that to-morrow is the thirty-first."

---

Love is undoubtedly a flame, a desire, a heaven, which can be found everywhere. But, it is also something which requires cultivation. Time and meditation are needed, in order to know and understand each other, and gradually, day by day, penetrate one step further into the mysteries of the soul.

When I meditate and devise happiness for others (which I often do), I wish for those who love, and would love always, even in the thickest of the crowd, a measure of solitude—solitude which alone initiates one in the art of love—a few quiet years at least, to permit the blending of their mutually-strengthened hearts, before they return again to the world and to the battle of life.

---

I see in my mind's eye this little solitary house—not exactly the laborer's cottage that you had set your heart upon, but not much larger even than that—two floors only, three rooms on each. No servant, or at the most an honest country girl, who will be treated by her mistress as a child, and who will spare her the heaviest part of the work. I would have this house at some distance from the city, whither you go to your daily business: so situated that it may receive all the warmth of the sun, with a large orchard, and a small flower-garden where your wife may work a little; above all, plenty of water, and, if possible, springs.

Yours be the task to plan, order, and arrange all this, even in its least details. Do not depend upon the women of the family, who will pretend that they understand these arrangements much better than you.

You alone, whom it concerns so deeply, should prepare the comfortable and charming cage to tempt your little bird, to make her wish to be caught, to live as your captive in order to become at last your queen.

Ask counsel of the bee. She tells you: "I put the same egg in two different cells—the royal cell, and the working cell. Two very different bees come from these different cradles."

As the nest is, so is the bird. Our surroundings, circumstances, and habits make us what we are. This nest of true love is a beautiful subject. But I do not wish to spoil it by forestalling it here. I do not wish to show the house while it is yet empty. How different will it be on the day, the happy day, when some one (I do not say who) comes to invest it with the charm of her presence, illuminate it with her beautiful eyes.

But if it has been partly, a very little, planned by affection, it will be so well constructed, so ingeniously and artfully disposed, that her young heart will be taken captive in every part of it ; and the arranging and managing of it will add to her affection the discipline of order, so powerful in its gentleness, and will deliver her wholly up to love.

---

## II.

## MARRIAGE.

"You are my brother, father, my revered mother;  
You my dear lover, my young husband are."

[*And.*]

THIS speech is spoken not alone by Andromache, but comes from the mouth of every woman at the time of her great transition.

First, it is spoken from her heart, by an impulse of nature, as it were.

She utters it also from a true and just appreciation of her situation. She well knows that he is now her all in all, her sole protector; and she pays no attention to the ceremonies by which the Church and the Law seem to protect her.

In reality, the force of this serious act is shown in that she gives herself away without any precautionary reserve, with no chance of withdrawal. If love is not there to receive her, if she does not fall into kind hands, all legal precautions will but aggravate her situation. All these paper barriers will be in vain; and not only that—by hardening and irritating him to whom she belongs, they will put her in still greater peril. A foolish thing this, to institute a preliminary war in marriage, and to believe that the interference of the law can be called in at all hours of the night or day, and keep watch even over the bed. From him who possesses woman

by the divine right of cohabitation, and who can impose upon her the pains of labor and the perils of maternity, there is absolutely no appeal. She has no other security but his love.

Ceremony, solemnity, and publicity are doubtless excellent in their way. But the foundation of the matter is in the heart. As the Roman juriconsult said, "Marriage is *consent*," an act of the will, a freedom which is voluntarily relinquished—a mutual exchange of hearts; but also a sacrifice of the weaker party, who, in giving herself over to the stronger, body and soul, with no stipulation whatever, risks everything for the future.

---

This is a very unequal contract, and neither the laws of the Church nor the laws of the State have yet seriously attempted to modify its nature. Both, in reality, are very hard upon woman.

The church is openly against her, owing her a grudge for the sin of Eve. It considers her a temptation incarnate, and closely in league with the devil. It permits marriage though it prefers celibacy, as the life of purity; for woman is impure. This doctrine is so thoroughly that of the Middle Ages, that those who wish to renew the spirit of the latter, contend (against the teachings of chemistry) that in her sacred crisis the blood of woman is unclean. So much for physiology and law! When woman is so far abased as this, what is she fit for but to be a submissive servant to the purer being, man? **She is the body; he is the mind.**

**The civil law** is not less harsh. It declares woman to be a minor all her life long, and pronounces upon her an eternal interdiction. Man is constituted her guar-

lian ; when it comes to the crimes that she may commit, the penalties that she may endure, she is treated as a perfectly responsible person, of the full age, and dealt with very severely. There exists moreover the same contradiction in all the old barbarian laws. "She is given to man as a chattel, punished as a responsible person."

---

"But the family at least," you say, "is on her side, and will really protect her."

I don't see that. I have known many theoretical friends of freedom, who, when it came to this point, forgot all their previous enthusiasm over this precious attribute, and married their daughters, in spite of themselves, to rich old men, whom they could not endure.

It is never dreamed that the feeble creature will, in this matter, attempt a siege against her father, her mother, and her whole family. She will yield to them, and allow herself to be urged onward to the fatal day, which she reaches wholly unprepared.

Every mother practises a sort of self-delusion ; she will say, most emphatically, "Oh ! how I love my daughter !" And yet what does she do for her ? She does not prepare her for marriage, either mentally or physically.

For one thing are mothers deserving of praise ; they generally keep better watch over the daughter's virtue than men believe. They wish her to arrive at marriage as a virgin, ignorant of everything, if possible ; and to have the husband delighted at finding her so fit a little girl in simplicity. And, in fact, this was not such him (he who has seen only abandoned women) as such a degree that he thinks she is playing the hypocrite.

This ignorance is, however, very natural when the girl is under the care of a jealous and watchful mother, and especially if she have no young female friends to instruct her. But there is danger in this total ignorance, by the mere fact of which the innocent maiden is exposed to more than one risk. The mother should enlighten her, and put her on her guard, as soon as she becomes a woman. At all events, it is her sacred duty to perfectly initiate her daughter before marriage, so that she may know well beforehand to what she is going to consent, what it is that she is to undergo.

No compact can be voluntary or worth anything if the conditions are not previously known.

Does she know in the morning what she promises for the evening? Is she, then, a person whose inclinations have been consulted? or a mere thing, silently handed over to her master? Does she know, above all, the exorbitant right that the husband is about to assume, in constituting himself (on doubtful authority) the judge of her past morals, of her proper conduct, her purity and her virtue?

---

She is not better prepared physically than mentally. Too much thought is given to the wedding dress, not enough to the maiden. Father, mother, friends, and even her betrothed, all busied with a thousand trifling preparations, neglect the very person who is the object of them all.

What is her condition at this moment of agitation, on such a trial? In such a place, she passes a restless night. Fatuity would make you believe that it is caused by impatience;



generally it is for quite the contrary reason. This most desired thing, now that it draws near, inspires her with fear and sadness, especially when it comes to the complete putting aside of all her former habits, when she finds herself on the threshold of such a vast and unknown future.

It is very natural that she should be restless and agitated, should have at times a little fever, that the circulation of her blood should be irregular or very rapid, the nutritive function slow, and difficult of accomplishment. This should all be thought of long beforehand; but every one is thinking of something else. Often, when the time finally comes, the maiden is very ill from fright, and in a state of painful plethora, which requires kind and gentle treatment.

---

Young man, read this all alone, and not with that thoughtless comrade whom I see behind you, mocking over your shoulder. If you read alone, you will read to some purpose. You will feel the responses of your own heart. And the holiness of Nature will touch you.

This book treats of religion, of truth, and of purity. If you find it a subject of amusement and ridicule, I do not doubt that you would laugh over your mother's coffin.

In marriage your happiness is immense, but how serious also! Respect it. Consider the sacred gravity of the adoption you are about to make, the infinite love that is expected of you by her who comes to you alone, and with boundless confidence.

Yes, alone, my friend. For you have seen that the Church affords her no protection, neither does the Law.

And the family, alas, has not taken much pains to comfort her on this painful day. The family does not sustain her, but brings her to you, gives her to you—to the chances of your judgment.

But I trust in you for her sake. And I am sure that, were all else in the world to fail, you would be to her that all—country, and priest, and mother; and that she would find in you the guaranty of this triple pontificate.

---

This is her whole thought, faith, and hope, when she tremblingly advances, so beautiful in her pallor, robed in fresh garments. She knows that she is no longer in her own house, and not yet in yours. She hovers between two worlds.

Where is she going, and what is required of her? She hardly knows. She does not know much of anything, except that she gives herself away in all the devotedness of her heart.

She has the bliss of thinking that she is henceforward in your hands. Will this be well or ill for her? and how will you treat her? are questions which concern you, not her.

In holding back nothing from you, in coming to you alone and without protection, in loving you and abandoning herself to your love, lies all her defence and security.

---

Said Christopher Columbus, when he drew near to the unknown world:

“Let heaven and earth pray and weep for me.”

## III.

## THE WEDDING.

THE hour has come. Her mother sheds a few tears, and leaves her. But I shall not leave her yet. I have something to tell you which even her mother does not know.

Do not be impatient and angry with me. Not for my sake is it, that I ask you to stay a moment. She has entered without fear, she loves you so! She has that modest assurance which is the gift of purity. But still, she is very much agitated; it is human nature. Her poor little heart beats so violently that you can see its throbbing. A moment, I pray you; let us leave her to recover a little, and breathe.

What I have to say to you is this:

I make and institute you her protector against yourself.

Yes, against yourself. Do not attempt to deny it; at this moment, you are her enemy.

A gentle, respectful, and loving enemy, it is true; but no less an enemy for all that. Let us cut short the insipid things that a man of the world would say about what the good breeding of gentlemen prompts them to do on such occasions. I know that when the greater part of them reach marriage, their ardor has been spent in the life they have led, in a great, too great, experience of pleasure. But even for those who are the most *blasé*, it is a matter of *amour propre*, of vain impatience. This

may have endless consequences. Hence, I believe here in that quotation from Natural History, which, though it may sound harsh, is very comprehensive: "The male animal is very fierce"—a verdict unhappily confirmed by medicine and surgery, which are too often consulted as to the consequences; and by those who, when cool, are indignant at the impious fury which can sully so sacred a moment.

---

There is another very serious thing, and one of grave importance:

Are you aware that, in this moment of agitation, you are divided between two conflicting thoughts? You do not understand either yourself or her. This white statue on whom you gaze so fondly, who is so touching, so love-inspiring, who, fearing to appear afraid, forces a pallid smile to her quivering lips—you flatter yourself that you understand perfectly; and yet she remains to you an enigma.

This bride of yours is the modern woman, made up of a soul and a mind. The antique woman was a body only. Marriage, in those times, being but a means of generation, a man chose for his wife a large rosy girl (red and beautiful are synonymous terms in barbarian languages). The woman was required to have plenty of blood, and to be ready to shed it. Great stress was laid upon this particular. The sacrament of marriage was a baptism of blood.

In modern marriage, which is in the highest degree the blending of souls, the soul is the essential thing. The woman that the modern man imagines for himself is a delicate and ethereal being, altogether different from

that ruddy girl of former times. She is the embodiment of nervous life. Her blood is all movement and action. It is shown in her quick imagination, her ever-working brain; in her sickly and morbid nervous grace; in her excited, often brilliant speech; above all, in that deep look of love which sometimes overwhelms and enchants you, sometimes agitates, but oftenest touches your heart and makes you weep.

This is what we really love, what we dream about, what we pursue and desire. And yet, when it comes to marriage, oddly enough, we forget all that, and expect to find a woman of hardy race, a robust country girl, who, when overfed and indolent, especially in the city, has an abundant supply of the red fountain of life.

The increase of nervous strength and the decline of that of the blood, begun a long time ago, is also a fact of these times. If the illustrious Broussais should return to the earth, where would he find in our generation (I mean among the cultivated classes) the torrents of blood that he drew, not without success, from the veins of the gentlemen of his times? Since then there has been a fundamental change; whether for good or evil, I leave to be decided. But, one thing is certain, and that is, that man has become refined, and delights more in mental pleasures. An uninterrupted succession of great works and discoveries has distinguished these last thirty years.

Everything has changed—woman with the rest. She has read these works, and informed herself after a manner of their teachings. She has lived on our thoughts. The young girl tries to conceal this, but who cannot read it in her eyes, in her often too expressive face, in

her easily-offended delicacy? Your betrothed feared nothing more than to possess the vulgar charms to which to-day you attach so much importance. You spoke so gloriously of pure love that she would be transparent if she could. She thought that you desired here on earth an ærial being, and that in your eyes she lacked nothing but wings.

Besides, those who have the least cause to fear this trial, who come to it more than pure, innocent, ignorant of everything, are often those who disturb and alarm you the most. So far does man lose his wits on that day, less through love than distrust and pride, that the touching shame, the nervous excitement, and little fears of the woman, so natural at this time, are at once interpreted in the most sinister manner. The man is a prey to various mortifying conjectures.

"Undoubtedly," he says, "she fears this trial. She puts off as long as she can a confession which she is afraid to make."

She does not understand this at first; but, if at last she discovers the burden of his thoughts, her agony and indignation may be imagined. She is choked by it; her eyes refuse to shed tears now. She who loved him so, and who would have told him everything, if there had indeed been anything to tell, to be thus distrustfully treated, thus wronged! It is enough to make her hate him for ever!

The man should remember that, if he judges the woman she judges him also, at this time. She is profoundly sensitive and loving then, but so much the more vulnerable. She receives in the deepest depths of her heart a shaft which either kills her love, or assures it an eternal existence.

Oh ! what a strange, astonishing, inhuman change has taken place in the man ! He who protested his love to her so vehemently, has now no mercy upon her. He does not see in her face what is often the fact, that she is really very ill from emotion. From the beginning she has had much difficulty in breathing. Afterwards, the nervous flood has mounted higher and higher, and sometimes bursts forth in a fearful tempest. Sometimes again, it is worse still ; nausea comes on ; the most temperate woman is completely disordered. Her situation is horrible, her agitation excessive.

Have pity on her ! be kind and gentle to her. Appreciate her situation, care for her, re-assure her. Let her know that you are not her enemy ; on the contrary, a most devoted friend, entirely at her service. Be discreet, full of tact, understanding and respecting her situation. And encourage her to the utmost.

Tell her this :

" I am thine, I am a part of thee. I suffer in thee. Take me as thy mother and thy nurse. Confide wholly in me. Thou art my wife and my child also."

---

This is a very precious time, when he who constitutes himself a mother and a nurse, repairs the wrongs of the lover. When the mind is calm, the body soon becomes calm also, and, the nervous tempest gradually dying away, feminine good-nature and docility begin to speak for you ; it pains and alarms her to see you looking sad. And though she may not yet have entirely recovered from her timidity, she will grant, through tenderness or sweet feebleness, such charming favors as would not otherwise have been vouchsafed to you. Watched

over by you, she will go to sleep in confidence. On her awaking you will lose nothing.

---

## IV.

THE AWAKENING.—THE YOUNG MISTRESS  
OF THE HOUSE.

ON awaking the next morning, what ecstasy for the young bridegroom—yesterday alone, to-day doubled, as he contemplates (scarce believing his eyes the while) that charming face, that beautiful and defenceless person reposing there under his care; it is too much for human nature, and the proudest are touched. No language, not even tears, can avail him then; sometimes the heart overflows with gratitude, and thanks the goodness of Nature and God. Sometimes, too, pride prompts him to an animal thought, and he can scarce restrain himself from exclaiming, “I own her! I am her master! It is really so; she is mine, mine!”

But this blind impulse of triumph is succeeded by a nobler sentiment, the deep necessity he feels to give something in return to the one who has brought him an infinity of bliss. Heaven and earth, his own life, seem not enough to offer her. His very heart seems to leap from his breast to give itself to her. “Take me,” he says, “accept me; my soul, my whole being, my thoughts, my will, for ever!”

The ancient laws have here taken advantage of the occasion, and conjured man to consecrate this hour, and



## The Young Mistress of the House. 97

perpetuate it—to ease his heart by insuring his wife's destiny. This was called the *morning gift*.

“Though a man should give his life for love, he would not think he had made a sacrifice.”

---

And I also, young man, shall stop you here; I, your master, am going to ask a gift of you.

Are you rich? Have you lands, forests, palaces? Well, keep them. She is above all that. What I ask for her is your word only, your promise to honor and respect your wife, never to be to her again what you were for a moment last night. Let her youth, her weakness, and her gentle obedience, be as sacred to you as the commands of your aged father. You should blush at having been harsh and violent, against your own nature; and to whom? to her! At having entertained the unworthy thought that you were strong, and she weak. Strong against her, who gives herself to you, trusts in you—strong against love, against God!

---

Day breaks; and so, fatigued, she has fallen asleep again upon her pillow. How pale and enfeebled she is! It is evident that she has suffered severely. That harsh conflict was too much for her. And what a cruel disappointment to find a hard and imperious master in the adored lover! He says to himself: “I am angry with myself. I have been a fool. I have defeated myself. Before this violence I was sure of her heart and of her will. Will she forget it? forgive it? What if she should cease to love me!”

He knows very little about her if he doubts her. She awakes, opens her eyes with a half smile, sad and gentle

at the same time ; looks about her to see where she is ; and then, like a timid child, hides her face for a moment. Is she really very angry ? No ; a little ashamed rather. Ashamed of what ? Of having suffered ; and it seems as if she would ask pardon for the harm that has been done her. She has need of quiet and of love, and she makes peace herself, by putting her little hand in his, with a sigh and these words : “ My love ! ”

Who could resist that ? He does not attempt to ; tears fill his eyes. She sees them, and kisses them away ; then languidly administers this mild reproach, which is in itself a caress of love : “ How impetuous you are ! there is no resisting you. Oh ! you are truly my master ; and yet I love you. But I am very unwell. May I get up ? ”

She is slow, a little heavy and lazy this morning—she who is usually so light and active. The young matron rises, however, with careful chasteness, but soon takes possession of an easy chair in which she lies back, weak and overpowered by lassitude. At her first glance in the mirror, she exclaims : “ Heavens ! how ugly I am ! ” This you strongly deny, but she still repeats it.

To make her appear at the breakfast-table before a mixed audience of jocose friends of your own, jealous lady-friends of hers, inquisitive sisters and brothers, would be barbarous. Spare her this exhibition.

How grateful she will be to you if you prevent this, and secure her solitude and repose. Her mother even will be *de trop* at such a time. Happy as the daughter might be to see her, she does not care to answer questions ; for the secret is henceforth the property of two. She cannot be a good and confiding daughter without telling too much about her husband.

## The Young Mistress of the House. 99

"No," you say to her, "fear nothing of this; be calm and rest yourself; nobody shall come to you; eat this warm and light breakfast that I have had prepared for you; it will give you strength. Then, I shall have the pleasure of showing you your house and your garden."

Now, if you have married wealthily, is the time I pity you. It is so hard to satisfy a rich woman. The prettiest things you show her barely raise a smile; and the smile itself often means, "Not so bad, but I have seen better."

She on the contrary who is only rich in beauty, mind, and virtue, who with this great marriage-portion modestly thinks that she has brought nothing with her, who, from a somewhat poor condition of life, passes to an easier, freer, and more comfortable one, is full of happiness, charming in her artless joy and astonishment, in the pleasure that she takes in seeing, touching, and adapting herself to everything, and saying the while: "And this is really our home!"

And again she adds: "What a nice house! Everything has been thought of. It almost makes one believe that it was all arranged beforehand, for a woman."

Do you imagine that what charms and touches the feminine heart must be something costly and luxurious? Not at all. What pleases them most is that act of yours which puts everything in the hands of the mistress of the house, permits her to arrange, take care of, and keep things in that order and cleanliness that woman so loves. It is then that she feels they are hers, and takes possession of them. They like large cupboards, deep drawers, good oaken closets to keep linen in, and little out-of-the-way hiding places,—they all like these;

but especially those who have nothing to hide in them.

Different kinds of furniture, seats of all heights, some even as low as a child's chair, they want, and should have. The sedentary woman needs to vary her working postures; these are but the liberties of the voluntary captive.

Have good carpets too, as cheap as you please, but thick, doubled, tripled even, with some soft lining; have them laid in all parts of the house, even on the stairs; for they are the delight of a woman's little foot, which delicately appreciates their gentle resistance, their velvet charm and soft elasticity. This is a great advantage, she has less cause to sit near the fire.

Have no stoves, but open fireplaces. Stove and headache are synonymous. Have wood to burn: it is more cheerful and healthy than coal. The imperceptible dust that comes from coal does the man, who comes and goes, but little harm, but is very injurious to the woman, who goes out much less than he, and whose lungs after a time become filled with it.

A happy moment is it for her when you put the keys in her hand. To let her have all the money, and the power to spend it, is a certain means to make her economical, if she is alone, and left to her natural discretion. From that moment all childish longings are checked. When anything tempts her, she says, "I can buy it, but I will wait till to-morrow." And to-morrow she thinks no more about it.

Let us not forget that the best of young women often comes to you from an extravagant mother, who has humored her every caprice; or a despotic mother, who,

## The Young Mistress of the House. 101

forbidding her to meddle in household affairs, has left her in ignorance of the real value of things, and the relative worth of money. You must instruct her, teach her how to defend herself against the tricks of trade, the dishonesty of servants, etc.

Although you give over to her the minor matters of the household, she will want you to retain the management of its higher interests, to regulate the more important receipts and expenditures. They do not like men who abdicate too much. By a charming contradiction they wish to be the mistresses, but have the man still master; that is to say, strong, and worthy of them. They often take pleasure, even in womanly things, in consulting him, and having him command and decide. It is a sensuality of love for them to obey, to feel that they are possessed by some one who wraps round them his loving strength, and who sometimes gently makes them feel the spur.

We shall return to the house; let us go now into the garden.

And to begin: can you not at a little cost, with a few pillars and a light zinc roof, build her a little open gallery or winter portico between the house and the garden, where she can work, and walk in the sun? another for summer, where she can sew, embroider, or read in the shade, before a purling fountain? Such a place of shelter costs but little, and yet is very necessary in our changeable climate.

How changed are all things here! How charming his solitary garden has become through her! With what a soft sunlight she has illuminated, bewitched it! Things have cast off their *thingly* qualities, and are

invested with spirits as it were, expressly to receive and bless her. Not a wall nor a stone that is not softened at sight of her. The flowers, with all their corollas opened wide, admire and contemplate her ; and the grass even grows fresher at having been touched by her foot.

She too is fascinated, delighted with the place. Now that she is here she wishes to remain for ever. She would never ask for the end of such a sweet enchantment. Lost in her thought of love, she lets you talk on without answering, absorbing the gentle moisture like the turf around the fountain. Her expressive mouth, though it utters no word, is full of eloquence, her gently heaving bosom still more eloquent. She walks, leaning upon your arm, and little by little letting herself down, until, clasping her hands, she suspends herself to you, and becomes almost heavy. This is doubtless through tenderness, from fatigue also, and from the heat of the day. The dear child lets herself go thus, partly carried by you ; saying, with a sigh : “ Ah ! how happy I am with you ! ”



## V.

## NARROWING THE HOME CIRCLE

LOVE creates love, and augments it. The secret of loving each other much, is to occupy ourselves much, one with the other, to live much together, the closest and most that we can.

"And what if they get tired of one another? ' you exclaim; "it will have the contrary effect; they will hate instead of love." Granted, if the alternation of solitude and society, a restless, unprofitable, and constantly varying life, prevents the mind from assuming a proper balance. But not if a contented life, varied only by love and labor, excludes all vain attractions, and binds the pair closer and closer together in that constant communion, where they think, live, and are happy, each through the other.

In Zurich, in the olden time, when a quarrelsome couple applied for a divorce, the magistrate never listened to them. Before deciding upon the case, he locked them up for three days in the same room, with one bed, one table, one plate, and one tumbler. Their food was passed into them by attendants who neither saw nor spoke to them. When they came out, at the end of the three days, neither of them wanted to be divorced.

---

The mere arrangement of our modern apartments is enough to hinder a real union. The multitude of little rooms divides the household, breaks up the family, isolates the married pair. Furthermore, the putting of one story upon another, in the great unhealthy barracks in which we crowd ourselves, brings us continually in contact with strangers.

The husband will work by himself, and the wife will suffer from ennui by herself, or occupy herself in useless talk with women whom she knows too little about. One must have a study, the other a *boudoir* (significant word); two bed-chambers, so that they can at all hours ignore and avoid each other, defend themselves against

each other if need be. The dining-room and the parlor bring them together momentarily, but their visitors and guests occupy their attention and divert them from each other; they are relieved of the necessity of speaking to each other, almost of seeing each other. I would advise such spouses to prudently put bolts on the doors of their respective chambers, for mutual assurance.

Why apply for divorce? A marriage like that amounts to the same thing. Those separate apartments effect it sufficiently.

---

And when you really love, how can you help envying my neighbor the carpenter, who has but one room in all? So that while he is sawing and planing, his wife, who is a washerwoman, sings at her ironing-table all the day long. Often have I forgotten myself in listening to her fine voice, which is strong and vibratory, fresh and clear. Sometimes she sings a little too loud, and disturbs me at my work; but that does not hinder me from saying: "Sing on, sing on, you poor little lark!"

---

"All very well for a carpenter," you say. "But my labors are of a higher order, have a more important object. I am a thinker. Every distraction withdraws me from my profound meditations." Too profound, sir—often hollow. Your works, those of these times at least, are for the most part barren; witty, I grant you—but with so little life in them, so unfeeling, so rarely *humane*. The author, at every moment, loses sight of the worlds of heart and of good sense.

A really human work, a powerful and living thought, one with a body to it, is not disturbed so easily. Its powerful impetus carries it along, and assimilates and



appropriates to itself all that might otherwise have diverted it from its course. How much easier is this, then, if what you call distraction is in reality from the very bottom of your heart, love and the beloved one! But both these are one and the same thing. Can she take you from work, or work take you from her? Neither. On the subject which seems the most remote even, she exercises an influence, by the warmth of love which she infuses into it.

---

I am always pleased with Dutch pictures. I find in them continually that charming promiscuousness of the man's study and the woman's housewifery, where the former is ennobled, the latter inspired with new ardor and increased in fruitfulness. Everybody has seen at the Louvre (and also in the exquisite description given in *la For Nouvelle*) the *Saint Joseph* of Rembrandt. But I am not the less struck with its microscopical philosophy, a picture of study familiarized with the family. In the faint light of the declining sun, near a window on which is spread a large open book, is an old man, who has ceased reading and is engaged in meditation, brooding over his thoughts. His eyes are shut, it seems; and yet he sees everything. He sees the servant poking the fire. He sees his wife (scarcely distinguishable in the picture) coming down the winding staircase. These pleasing images, you may be sure, are blended with the pleasant nature of his thoughts. Behind him is a closet-cellar, containing a little generous wine, with which he sometimes refreshes himself. Such is the complete picture of a man who has gone through life, and is now living on its vintage.

If that book is the Bible, I am sure that the good man will take the best and highest sense of it. His is the intellect to understand the sayings of Tobias, Ruth, and the patriarchs. He will not lose himself in vain and unprofitable analysis, and will not care to inform himself, as others do, of the sex of the angels. The same man, in the cell of a convent, would have made commentaries like those of Scotus, and Thomas Aquinas, upon the Bible; refining, subtilizing, and in fact reducing everything to barrenness. Here, it is quite the contrary. And why? Because the household, the family and affection, bring him ever back to the real. All that touches the heart in this chronicle of remote times, is re-made and renewed in him; he sees it again through the medium of his heart.

---

A charming thing to observe, which I have often remarked with pleasure among my more studious friends, is the infinite delicacy of the young wife, who in a restricted space comes and goes, and moves round the student, without in the least disturbing him. Any other person would have put him out; but "she," he says, "is nobody." In fact, she is himself, his second and his better soul.

She holds her breath, and steps on tiptoe. She glides along the floor. She has such respect for work! In this you can see what a gentle and quick-sighted creature woman is; above all things affectionate, and feeling in constant need of the beloved object. If he allows her, she will remain in the room sewing or embroidering. If not, a thousand occasions or a thousand necessities will occur to her as pretexts to come into the room.—

"What is he doing now? How far has he got? Perhaps he is working too hard? He will make himself sick."—All this passes through her mind.

There are many studies to which unwittingly she imparts more than she can take away. Do you think that the charming electricity she communicates in passing you, lightly touching you with her dress, goes for nothing with the artist and the author, if with our tiresome and uncongenial work is opportunely mingled that perfume of the flower of love which revives everything? So in old Italian pictures do we see in a death's head a hundred-leaved rose; and death itself seems to enjoy it.

And how happy he is to feel that she is there. He pretends not to see her. He remains bent over his work, as if absorbed in it. But his heart gains the upper hand, and he exclaims:

"My darling, my charming rosebud, do not muffle your steps. Your movements are harmony, your voice a melody which enchants my ear. Your presence sheds its influence upon my work; it will be adorned with your grace, and glow with the flame of my palpitating heart.

"Without seeing you, I guessed you were here by the increased ardor of my work, by the light which overspread my spirit."

A thousand years from now they will say: "His is yet a live book, all warmth and affection." And the reason of it all—she was beside you when you wrote it.



## VII.

## THE TABLE—DIET.

IN order that such a great change in life may not be harmful to the young woman, everything must be thought of and arranged beforehand; her girlish diet should be slightly and slowly changed. Care should be taken not to let her pass abruptly from the fruit and vegetable feasts, which most girls prefer, to the stronger food of man. She would be ill, if this were neglected. Nothing is more senseless than the custom we adopt from the English—that of keeping an indolent and sedentary woman on a heavy meat diet, scarce necessary to a hearty workman, or active man of business. The woman can only stand such irritating diet by adding to it the greater irritation of spirituous liquors. By this course she becomes faded, used-up, and red-faced, at a very early age; it leads to the extermination of all beauty, and, in the end, a serious decline in the race itself.

You must preserve to your young wife all the habits of her girlhood, modifying them little by little; and see that, from the first day, she finds in her new house everything that she had in her mother's. You have thought of these, I am sure, for I know your good heart. You have learned long beforehand from her mother, her nurse, or perhaps the family physician, all about her physical constitution, and how it is to be treated. To prepare her nest properly for her you should know everything, her habits, her usual state of health, her

little indispositions, all her womanly peculiarities. This should not spring from an empty curiosity, but from an absolute necessity. You should even, without exercising undue inquisitiveness, go back a little into the history of her family, into its *blood* inheritances, and know something of the diseases to which it is subject. Her health will depend on your knowing this, as will also your own diet, for you will surely choose such dishes as agree with her and preserve her strength.

Many women of the high classes reach marriage in a state of great debility (their blood being too much thinned out)—sickly from their birth, or in consequence of unwholesome diet. He who receives into his house such a frail flower as this, too often finds that she is not able to endure the labors of love. Before having a child from her you must strengthen the poor creature herself, bring her to woman's full estate. You must be her mother in order to be her husband.

---

One great fault in mothers and nurses is that they wish the child to eat until he is in danger of making himself ill. If it goes so far as an indigestion, they are delighted and say: "He is improving." I have seen the strange spectacle of doting mothers absolutely begging, nay, forcing their sons to eat and drink to excess, manifesting at each mouthful the delight and pleasure that they themselves felt from it. They really made gluttons and sensualists of themselves, for their sons' sake. Love has similar effects. Dining one day with a very quiet friend, I noticed, at dessert, that he had become quite affected: somewhat as a gastronomer might be if served with his choice bit. But here there was no cause nor

pretext for anything of the kind. I looked across the table and saw his young wife eating a favorite fruit. My friend looked at this fruit, blushed, and became agitated. I understood it all then. He himself made no secret of it. "I felt her pleasure so sensibly," he said, "that I could not contain myself. I love her, and everything that she feels, I feel myself, in a greater degree."

But these impulses of your nature are too strong, and she must not see them. She would be disturbed by them. Such physical identity of appetite and faculties would be harmful to the weaker of the two. Her flame would be lost in yours. Be calm, then, I pray you; practise moderation and prudence; be gentle with her, not precipitate.

---

A very profound communion is this of the table, especially where there are but two in the family, when domestics interfere but little, or none at all.

Man nourishes woman, brings every day, like the bird in the fable, the bread to his lone love. And woman nourishes man. She prepares and cooks his food according to his needs, to his physical condition, to his known temperament; part of herself goes with it; with the food is mingled the perfume of her beloved hand.

Hence, these two are fed by each other. Each of them feels with delight that not an atom in their respective beings belongs to one of them alone; but that day by day, everything is renewed, revived by the beloved object. Of this law of the stomach, which we consider low and base, nature has made one of the gentlest bonds, a high poesy of the heart, wherein union becomes

unity. Who shall say that their natures are not more blended by this calm and gentle communion than by the crisis even, and the transport of love? In mutual alimutation, as in generation, an equal interchange, a transmutation of substances, is effected.

---

Behold them then at the table, seated opposite each other, and eating together for the first time. You are delighted to be where you can feed your eyes upon her. She, during your short absence, has thought of you, and wished to beautify herself for your sake; she has adorned herself, and yet with how little? With a flower from the garden, which she has set in her hair.

This single day has profited her. She is another person now. The smiling girl has become an impressive woman. Her smile now is that of modest gravity, and she is *Madam* already.

She has not much appetite. A few vegetables, a little fruit, some milk, is what she likes. Your carnivorous diet has no attractions for her. She has a horror of death, a horror of blood—very natural this, since she herself is the flower of life. It is especially for this that she needs that country girl of whom I have spoken. She would gladly prepare your food, but this bloody meat is too repulsive to her. She is also too delicate for the heavy work, which is nothing at all to the robust peasant woman, who, in addition, can cultivate the garden.

Cookery is a medicine, the best kind of medicine, a preventive. Hence, it should be the duty of the wife, who alone knows just what her husband needs, how hard he has worked, and his expenditure of vital strength. In all that is proper, not repugnant to her, all that does not

## 12 You Should Wait on Each Other.

deface her pretty hand, in all that may be *touched* by her hand (and let us add, necessarily mingled with the emanations of the person), it is desirable and charming that she should be the only performer. Certain pies, cakes, and puddings can be made only by one whom we love and cherish.

Pure as she is, she is not the less possessed of the sentiment and the power of divining what affords you pleasure. She knows your gastronomic weakness perfectly, and how well you relish everything that has been touched by her hand. She has forestalled your thought. The thing that you like best, that thing she has prepared for you. This dish which you so affect has been prepared by her hands; she has touched it with her mouth, consecrated it with her lips. She brings it to you with a smile:

“Eat this, my dear, for I have tasted it.”



## VII.

### YOU SHOULD WAIT ON EACH OTHER.

I do not write for the rich, who complicate their lives at will with a thousand tiresome and dangerous inutilities, who live in the continual presence of their servants (for “servants” read “enemies”), who eat, sleep, and love beneath those malevolent and scoffing eyes. They have no intimacy, no privacy, no home.

And unfortunately I cannot write for those who have



no time to themselves, no liberty ; who are crushed and overpowered by the fatalities of circumstance, those whose incessant labor controls and pushes forward the hours. What advice can we give to people who are not free to follow it? I write for those who are at liberty to regulate their own lives, for the poor but not indigent man who works at home, and for those who are voluntarily poor—that is to say for people of fortune who are sensible enough to live plainly, without servants, and to have something which can really be called a home.

---

The saying that “ a third person spoils company ” is essentially true of the married state.

A quiet country girl, however, for the “ hired help,” does not break up the *tête-à-tête*.

If you are so fortunate as to have a little house by yourselves, she will have her kitchen and laundry on the ground floor, and seldom come up-stairs.

The girl is not entirely alone ; her mistress goes down to see her, especially during your absence, and gives her good advice, such as she can readily understand. She will teach her to read, and train her in good habits.

She has also the garden to herself, as well as the cat, the dog, and the chickens, with which she holds daily talks, as when she was on her own place.

This honest creature, however honest she may be, is not the less a woman, and consequently curious. Hence, in going up to her bed-room, at the top of the house, she will not fail to put her eye to the key-hole, and listen to what is said. A double door and a little ante-chamber should be between your apartment and the staircase up which she passes, goes and comes, listens and observes.

## 114 You Should Wait on Each Other.

"But how," asks my lady, "will this gawky country girl take the place of my Julie, my *femme de chambre*, who is so clever, and knows how to do everything?"

Clever? Why, you are as clever as she. Come, my lazy beauty, you do yourself injustice. In making a tasteful toilet, I have full confidence in your delicate hands. Woman, in this particular, has an inexhaustible fund of dexterity and invention.

And, if you absolutely need a *femme de chambre* for other and more delicate attentions, I will present you one who is fairly dying for the place; who has a hundred times more zeal than *Mademoiselle Julie*, *Mademoiselle Lisette*, and all the illustrious disciples of the art; who, moreover, is not malicious; who will tell nothing to your disadvantage to your neighbors; who will not make sport of you to her lover; who will not make faces behind your back when you speak to her. "But where is this treasure?" you ask. "I will engage her at once; she is just what I want." "She is beside you."

Behold your subject, O queen! who beseeches you to take him into your service; he will regard it as an exaltation if you raise him to the dignity of a titled valet de chambre, to the feudal position of chamberlain, head lackey, or master-butler of your house—leech in ordinary (as to hygiene at least), for his zeal knows no bounds. All these court offices he will fill gratis, and in addition to his masculine duties will perform those of woman also, feeling proud and honored, *Madame*, if your majesty will accept his very humble service.

"But he has too much other business," you say, "he has no time for this. I should be ashamed to employ him, for my own sake, in such an unprofitable

## You Should Wait on Each Other. 115

manner. I must confess, too, that all these little womanly things require to be done *idly*, slowly, and with very little expedition. All should progress slowly, and be diversified with gossip. The man who is really a man is too impetuous, he wants to hurry everything, and get to the end of it. We should have accomplished nothing in the end. All his attentions would be turned into caresses. My toilet would be more disordered than improved."

Let us have secret for secret, Madame, confession for confession. You must know then that the busiest of men has abundance of time, a superfluity even, so soon as his real pleasure is concerned. Some Roman, whose name I have forgotten, either a general, or a magistrate, or a courtier, or a king of the world, as Roman kings were in those days, found time enough every morning to be present when his son was in the hands of his nurses, noted what was done for his physical education, saw him washed, dressed, etc., etc. Henri IV. with all his affairs of state, did not fail for a single day to have a minute account written, and rendered him, of all the new-born Dauphin's actions—having it set down hour by hour, by a skilful physician, how the child had eaten, slept, digested, etc. The great men of our day, much more occupied than the emperors and consuls of Rome, more occupied than Henri IV., find time to exercise their brisk loquacity four hours a day at the Bourse, the Palais de Justice, at the cafés, and six hours of the night at the play (to which they never listen). No, decidedly it is not time that is wanting.

It is not wanting for the useless and foolish questions of the day, from which we always come away

## 116 You Should Wait on Each Other.

yawning, no wiser than before. It is only wanting when our happiness is concerned.

Now here is a man who says that he will be perfectly happy if you accord him an hour of which you can make but one disposition. You are his child, his Dauphin, his play even, his opera, his charming and divine comedy.

Yes, *Divine*. I will not retract that. I judge it so by the devotion with which he presides at these things which you think small and futile. You laugh; he does not. The day that you admit him to your dressing-room, you will find him moved, affected with a true religious feeling. Never did pious oriental, after a long pilgrimage, enter his holy pagoda in a more appropriate state of mind. He is inquiring, but above all tender, full of respectful desire—admiring, adoring. You need entertain no fear of him. What servant, however devoted, ever regarded you with such partial eyes? Do you think that Julie, whom you regret, so flattering and favoring, has not (I say it in a whisper) remarked some little fault on your most beautiful person, that she has not sometimes laughed in her sleeve?

He, on the contrary, has eyes so predisposed, that he sees nothing but what is lovely, superlatively beautiful. What looks he casts upon you! how loving, how caressing! And all this is pure. There is nothing so pure as true love.

Montaigne says somewhere that the sight of healthy people communicates health and cures disease. I shall change this but a little, to say that it is the look of love which bears happiness with it, and brings beauty into blossom. From this results that charming refulgence

which a woman so soon assumes. The reason is that she has been visited with this look.

Sacred object that you are, you need fear nothing. You yourself are his religion, and, if you keep your heart worthy and pure, will always be. Never in his eyes of burning love, and yet of respect, can you descend from your divinity. You will not lose your altar. You will be adored for ever.

"Alas!" she says to herself, for she would never dare to whisper it to other ears, "how can I be always adored? And is it not the natural result of such a close intimacy that, never being able for a moment to escape the attention of the one who loves, of his tender uneasiness, you will at last show him the more vulgar and inferior aspects of your life. Who can be sure of being poetic every day? of not being brought down by relentless nature from his high ideal of love to common prose?"

These are but girlish fancies, and spring from her perfect ignorance of the real state of things. Those who understand love, know very well that it is not here that the honeymoon first begins to wane. None of these simple and harmless things ever affect the man.

If you wish to know how woman really descends from poetry to prose, I will tell you.

It is not in showing herself a woman, in artlessly confessing what she is, what we all are, mortal, human; but in showing herself to be cold and vain, in letting his eyes, so blind to certain things, and so sharp-sighted for others, discover her moral infirmity.

People think it is satiety which so soon kills love; but they do not appear to know that satiety often comes

## 118 You Should Wait on Each Other

not from too complete possession, but from too little; from a feeling that the woman's inner self will not be reached, her soul not attained; that she is empty, vain, and frivolous; that all quest would discover nothing in her.

This girl, yesterday so adorned, so coquettishly dressed to the very hour of her marriage, as seen to-day, a wife at her toilet, seems totally changed in this particular. She scarcely takes proper care of herself. But the wedding guests are invited; there is to be a great ball this evening. No sooner does she think of that than, as if to prepare for a second marriage, she becomes active, pains-taking, and difficult to please.

Love, so fascinated, so blind a moment ago, here takes another view of the matter. It translates this negligence of every day into, "I am dressed well enough for my husband." And this adornment for the ball into, "I long to please other people, above all."

Well, this cools his ardor, and satiety sets in. She is vulgar, frivolous; the ideal here is torn down, and will never be set up again.

The impression is just the contrary, if the earnest observer remarks a nice attention to the toilet of which he is to be the sole spectator, a loving coquetry of dress for the hours when they shall be alone together. "Nothing for others," he says, "and everything for me." This is what is meant in these matters. Not a word is spoken, but that which would give rise to the words is but the more deeply felt. Love here feels itself upon solid ground, and it will take deep, strong root. You need fear nothing for Love's ideal; it will continue to flourish upon both the poetic and the real.

## You Should Wait on Each Other. 119

But why distinguish them? When one loves, they are one and the same thing. O frigid generation, timid and weak woman, ignorant of your true powers, how little do you know that love is of a robust constitution, and laughs at such things ! how little it in reality cares about that which is the subject of such grave harm with you !

In true married life, everything is poetry ; and in the person who is loved everything is noble.

The proudest of men does with a good grace whatever he can do for the woman he loves. And she, queen of the house, whatever she may do, does everything royally.

They are servants, one to the other, but with this distinction : she is the servant in all things of love and usefulness, connected with themselves and the household ; he waits upon her *herself*, in showing her personal attentions.

These are humble functions, but of great grace and favor. Do you remember on this point the good old feudal rule? The rank of the several dignities was determined by the opportunities they afforded to approach, and to serve, the royal person, not by affairs of state then, but by those which concerned the individual

---

## VIII.

## HYGIENE.

YOUTH of a loving and a faithful heart, understand well from the beginning, that your most sacred duty is to profit first by the artless faith of your young wife; by her eighteen years, by the bountiful supply of docility she brings you; to take entire possession of her, mentally and physically, taking her body and her soul—her soul to fertilize, to illumine, to enlarge it—her body, to strengthen, to prepare it for the great trial it soon must undergo—I mean the sharp pains of maternity.

Your moral responsibility is far greater than you have ever dreamed of or imagined. The life of the heart, and the life of the body, are to be so blended in you, that the lightest matters between you will become vastly weighty, or delightful, or sad. No detail is to be scorned, no trifle neglected. Everything is of immense importance to your future.

---

Make haste to be her master. For, in a little while, I predict that she will be your mistress, at least by habit; and she will hold you firmly on all sides. Yes, the more gentle, the more docile, ay, the more humble, the woman is, the more she entwines herself, the more she clings and holds fast to you. All this by seemingly slight, invisible, weak bonds, yet possessing an unheard of strength. At first, it is a thread, light and graceful, like the "*Threads of the Virgin*," which fly in the wind,



and yet are fastened with so much strength. In the second stage they are like the tendrils of the vine, whose prehensile fingers, though of infinite delicacy, already clasp tightly. In the third stage, my friend, it will be the strength of the ivy, which so clings to and twines around the oak it has once seized upon, that it incorporates itself with it; that it even pierces it; the pruning knife cannot separate it; no means of disengaging the one, except by cutting to the heart of the other.

Well, all this is as nothing to the worth of a woman who, in solitude, imbued by you, imbues you; who, cherished by you, cherishes you; who holds you by the house, by the fireside, by the bed, by the children; finally, by all your feelings in common; who takes possession of you by her boundless compliance and docility, who submits to your whims, and who, for the joy of one moment, returns an eternity of pure love.

"So much the better," say you, "that she should take possession of me! This does not frighten me at all. It is what I desire." That is well; but, thus warned, you should early make yourself master of this young and potent influence, which, in a few years, without art, without artifice, by the force of love alone, will conquer and absorb you.

This absorption will be the greatest misfortune for both of you, if you have not imbued her with your soul—that is the modern soul. For such as you are, young man, and however corrupted by experience, you are still a great deal more than she, the repository of truth. The poor creature, alas, is in utter darkness! She has learnt, strictly speaking, only those things which she must unlearn. Her good heart, her maidenly nature,

her charmingness, will serve only to ruin you both, with your child and your future, if from this day you do not assert the authority of science and of knowledge. It is not in vain that for three centuries human genius has stored up in your hand (your strong masculine hand), the treasure of certainty. Avail yourself of it to-day or never, my friend; for it is your salvation. Great heaven! What will become of you if you see her, ere long, relapsed into the past, become your innocent adversary, waging on you a war, not of words, but of tears and sighs. I pray you do not lose her—hold fast to her. For your life, and for her life, moral and physical, remain master (she desires it, she prefers it); subdue her. Inclose her in yourself, in your constant, unchanging, clear-sighted thought.

You should not lose sight of the fact that you will shortly (who knows? it may be in nine months) have to undergo the rudest trial to which nature is subjected. I say *you*, for at that moment you will suffer as much as she; the tortures of inaction and of impotence make a man feel at such times more than the agony of death. Then, though you should weep tears of blood, you could do nothing. Your strength, the impulses of your heart, your vows, your anxiety, your useless terror, will avail her nothing. You must foresee, you must provide for it from this moment, in these yet quiet days; and have present, beforehand, the chances and the perils of that terrible day.

This should render you attentive to, and careful of everything. The indifferent attentions of a physician, who comes at intervals, often thinking of other matters,

will not suffice for you. Rather do I put my trust in your clear-sightedness, in the intuition of love, in its fixed and powerful look, riveted on the beloved object, from which nothing can distract it, which it sees through and through!

But the woman physically is a being all ductile, of a strange mobility. One is almost dazzled by looking at her; symptoms so varied are mingled and confused. Distrust your memory. Nothing will sustain you better than keeping a little journal of her physical life. If this was done by order of Henry IV., for Louis XIII., if the most prosaic incidents of the life of that disagreeable king, were noted day by day, why should you not do it for your sweet wife, all poetry, all purity, and who holds your life dependent on her fragile young life?

You must not worry or beset her with these details. It is not necessary for her to see too much of the burning anxiety of your love, ever uneasy, and often without a cause. That would deprive her of much serenity. Do this for yourself, to remind you, to guide you; this fixed foundation of experience and observation will soon assist you to foresee, almost always correctly, what she will be to-morrow, or even for days ahead, in health and disposition—a great, a very great advantage. You will bear much better with her caprices (which are only sufferings). You will ask for nothing but at the proper time, at the very moment, perhaps, that she herself was thinking of it.

Interested to this extent in the details of her physical life, you should by a gentle, incessant, patient progress, entirely surround her, take possession of her, little by little. But no precipitation. Nothing should be more

sacred, more skilfully managed, than the modesty of a young wife. They are complained of too soon, and as a general thing, wrongfully. There is no coldness, no affectation in them. But the most loving, the most devoted, is at times nervous to a point of real suffering. They are like birds of a superior and delicate organization. A nightingale, which I have lost, loved me very much, but he could not bear to have me approach him; he trembled at being touched.

Still an intimate life creates almost inevitable embarrassments. The familiarity refused to the lover, to the tender friend, to the most kindly observer, is granted to persons less worthy, less trusty. When Madame de Gasparin advised the lady not to allow herself to be seen in what she called "the sad reality of unadorned nature," she did not fully feel that the favor forbidden to the husband would be granted to the *femme-de-chambre*. "Is this a trifle?" Not at all: it is the beginning, the opportunity, of a certain relative intimacy, more dangerous than would be believed, and fatal to your union.

To the pure all things are pure. To treat this delicate point frankly, we must say that it is better that this familiarity, which will come sooner or later, should not come through the freedom and unrestraint between an old married couple, but shortly after marriage, between lovers. And this all artlessly, all simply. You risk but little by it. Love, then exalted, accepts everything, adores everything, of the loved object, grateful for every step towards confidence. This is the right moment to break through those little barriers which must be broken down in the end, and at a less favorable epoch.

A month will not pass without the opportunity. If she is ill, must the husband be driven out and the mother called in? Is it necessary, in so simple a matter, one which concerns pure hygiene alone, that the latter should send for a physician, a stranger, to whom the young wife must painfully confess those little mysteries which she does not tell even to her husband? Often, in case of *delay*, she confides in her silly old nurse, or some foolish "good wife," who, to relieve her, advises dangerous stimulants.

Now who should concern himself in this, if not he who has so much interest in it? This crisis, which is (a thing proved) only that crisis of love which furthers fecundation, comes from love itself. Thus, contrary to the gross and barbarous prejudice which would sequester the woman at such a time, no one who loved could ever conceive that she was then an object of estrangement. He has always thought her very pure. So interesting at this time, so tender and so confiding, her languor significantly says: "I suffer, and it is for you."

---

She needs an attentive, confident guardian, who knows everything, who can aid her in everything. For she is so exposed! If she takes cold, there is an end to all. If she has a fright, or is aggrieved, if she weeps, there also is an end of it. If she digests badly, all is perilled. What she dare not tell, you must have a presentiment of, must be able to conjecture. She is so afraid of displeasing! They are unhappily deeply imbued with that old idea of a so-styled impurity, now contradicted by science. It is the first duty of love to enlighten them on this point.

Poor martyrs to modesty! The smallest matters often seem grave to them, and terrify them. A little while after marriage, the young wife is looking very red, her head is heavy, her eyes blood-shot. "What is the matter?" "Nothing." She dare not tell you. This lasts a week. Then she appears feeble and pale. Another week. But she is still silent. You know she is not *enceinte*. "Call the doctor," says the mother. It is very easy to understand, without a doctor, that a new diet, perhaps a little too rich, has troubled her, producing at first a feeling of fullness, then the contrary effect—inflation and weakness. A slight aperient will set all right again. Let the physician order it, and she modestly bows her head, and is resigned. If it is the husband who begs and supplicates, she blushes, and becomes indignant. "Good heavens! she has committed no excess; she has not been a glutton." You must be gentle, patient, discreet, and not urgent. Let all be within her reach; she will timidly, in secret, do what you desire. Happy in reality not to be compelled to submit to the interrogations, to the solemn inquest, of the physician.

---

He who is truly loving, who loves for her, and not for himself, envelops her in himself, but without weighing upon her. She does not feel the weight of the air which she breathes; and why? Because it is both within and without. It is the same with love. She who has it in her heart finds it only very sweet to feel it around her, to find it in everything, as if it were her inevitable atmosphere, the element of her respiration. It will become necessary to her; and if this envelopment, which

you may think persecution, is withdrawn from her a single moment, she will be very unhappy.

As to the rest, in these first months your cares will not be very heavy. Almost always the physical life, benignantly influenced by hope and by happiness, assumes the most charming aspects. Your drooping flower raises itself with an unexpected brilliancy and grace. That she were a little stronger is all that can be desired; and even this must not be desired impatiently.

Let her live a country life, work a little, perspire a little (a very little in the beginning). Let her go to and fro in the large garden, not remaining seated too long. Let her bathe herself in the sunned water, otherwise cold. Let her, too, often, all alone, at her ease, in security, bathe out of doors. It will be an advantage if her white skin assume a healthy brown tone. Plants kept in the shade are emaciated and pale. Our clothing unfortunately keeps us in the same condition, by separating us from the father of life, the sun.

---

## IX.

### OF INTELLECTUAL FECUNDATION.

“The child should not come before his cradle has been suitably prepared.”

Which means that it is not desirable that the union should be too soon fruitful, but that the young wife,

who must herself be the first cradle of the child; should previously strengthen herself for the emotions of her new situation.

She must have a respite between the two dramas of her life. Marriage, which appeared to you so agreeable an incident, was to her a trial, and too often a trial lasting even until now. Leave her alone, that she may breathe. Let her have an interval of calm, in which, feeling no longer the thorns of the beginning, and not yet the agitation of pregnancy, this sweet creature of suffering may enjoy herself also, and taste a moment of tranquillity—an interval, moreover, very necessary, infinitely precious, in which your moral union, scarcely commenced, will be really formed; in which your wife, intimately associated in your thought, brooding over it in her imagination, will prepare, unconsciously, the new being which shall be, which is, only that thought in the bosom of the dear dreamer in whom your love will be incarnated.

That union you think you already have. You believe you possess your wife, and are assimilated with her. Far from it!

Possess? It is not for one night (or for several, often still very painful) that you can have the satisfaction of employing this word—not even for that dazzling state in which love plunges her, causing her, first of all, to admit the ideas of her lover, however new they may be, and thoughtlessly to believe all that he says to her.

In reality, matters do not progress so fast. Coming together from two opposite worlds (she is almost always educated by her mother in retrograde opinions), you cannot fuse in a moment. The old-fashioned things



on which she has been nourished, from which she seems emancipated, may re-appear one day to divide you. Your pride says, no. She, at heart more tender, loving her love so much, wishing so much to preserve it, she insists with a happy instinct on entering in, still more, without reserve, and without retreat.

---

"I work by your side, and I see you work. But this is not enough for me. What you are doing is an enigma to me, and I wish to understand it. I feel that, during these hours, although present, I must be forgotten, and that I am almost always exiled from your thoughts . . . This is very hard. Ah, that I might share your toil, that I might aid you! I should be so happy!

"But I am incapable of it! Far from comprehending your ideas, I can scarce unravel my own. When you urge me to open my heart to you, I cannot express myself. Then you complain, and call me cold. Ah, you are wrong! I know not what hindrance, what shackle, remains to me of the past. Is it because I lack intelligence, or are my teeth locked together? I cannot speak—speak to me, you who can; free me from myself, instruct me, put a soul in me."

This is nearly what the intelligent young wife says. She wishes very earnestly to be associated with him, and this in two ways, if she can.

His technical, special life, of art, of science, or of business, will not be repulsive to her. (One will set herself to work to dissect! Another to copy, or to calculate astronomical tables!)

But it is above all the highest life of her husband, his

more general ideas, which she desires to comprehend and appropriate to herself. She asks for his trust and his faith.

This, then, is your docile pupil. Happy situation ! Charming kindness of nature ! Her young mind complains only of not being sufficiently mastered, of not belonging sufficiently to you. She devotes her mind and heart to any pursuit that you may choose. She aspires only to give herself to you, to belong to you still more entirely.

---

Nothing is more delightful than to teach a woman. She forms a perfect contrast to the perverseness and insubordination that a child often offers. Call him to his lessons, he runs off as fast as he can ; she anticipates the hour, she is attentive, happy, eager for your teachings, believing in, full of deference and respect for the learning of him whom she loves. So that even when she is not yours, your loved one, the delight of your heart and eyes, by her amiability alone she is a model pupil.

Mark well, that she is pleased by this thing, at assuming this rôle of pupil which makes her so young. She is as much delighted to receive these lessons as your caresses, as anything else, since all comes from you. She is sensitive to the gentle encouragement, the praise, by which you stimulate her ; sensitive also to reproaches. She does not dislike to be scolded ; but if you are very severe, if you call her "Madame," she becomes agitated, and almost weeps. She throws herself in the arms of the master. That ends the lesson.

"That is enough for to-day. We will read no more."

In these charming tasks there is but one thing to be regretted. Do you wish me to tell you what it is?

It is that often she has not paid attention, she has not understood at all, or has conceived an entirely different matter.

Not that she may not be very intelligent, often very intellectual. But she is infinitely more so for knowledge that she derives intuitively, than for what is imparted to her.

Strange truly, that a being so receptive by nature, and made for fecundation, should with difficulty receive the fecundation of the mind, even when lending herself entirely to it!

The odd title of a Spanish book of the sixteenth century has often set me a-dreaming: "The Seven Fortifications of the Soul's Castle."

Seven? It is not enough. Those enclosures are infinitely numerous. You force one or two of them, and believe that all is done, the place is carried. . . . Not at all. Other ramparts are behind which must be surmounted. But the peculiarity is, that here is a place wishing nothing but to surrender itself, to open its gates. The mind of the woman who loves much, and feels that she is loved, burns to surrender itself without reserve, and to become entirely subordinate. It drives no hard bargain for itself. It wishes to yield, and it cannot.

---

The obstacle is not in the least in her will.

It is in her education;

It is in her woman's nature;

And, above all, in your awkwardness.

If the education of the boy is severe, that of the girl has almost always been negative and barren. I do not speak of the worldly ones, who are spoiled, and fine ladies at fifteen. But the education of those who are modestly reared is, by a vexatious contrariety, almost like that of a plant cultivated in a cellar. They come from it sad and awkward, with but little address. Time is required to give them courage, buoyancy, confidence in themselves. Grace will return to them through loving and being loved. With grace, too, the intellect will be quickened. They become susceptible of mental germination, of being mentally impregnated.

---

But how shall the seeds be sown ?

It is very seldom that a man knows the course of instruction precisely suited to a being so delicate and so different from himself.

Either he sermonizes, makes long speeches, and fatigues her, not seeing that she in no wise follows his processes of deduction, and that she tries in vain to listen to him.

Or it may be that, more modest, he keeps himself back, and thinks to act on her by reading, by books,—not knowing that a book truly adapted to a woman has never yet been written.

---

There is not one entirely suited to a young woman. You must choose from the best that which is most fitted for her. This will vary infinitely, according to character and circumstances.

Reading, too varied and not discreet, has deplorable effects upon women.

They are in nowise prepared, either by constitution or by education, to receive all sorts of indigestible nourishment. Nature, reserving them for things more elevated and more delicate, has not given them that brutal strength of digestion, which crushes and overcomes iron, stones, poison; which takes only the good from them, and lives, like Mithridates, continually poisoned.

And when I speak of poisons, I do not even think of immoral things. Her purity will repel them. I speak of a world of things unwholesome from their very nullity—vulgar things, useless things, which weary the mind.

The man is condemned to the daily fatigue of prodigious inquiry, to exhaust the world of details, to learn everything, to sound everything, even in the most muddy stream of experience; but it does not follow from that, that he should drag into it the sacred being who guards the very heavens for him.

---

Oh, for a book worthy of woman! Where shall I find it? A holy book, a tender book, but one which shall not be enervating! A book to strengthen without hardening, without blunting her, which will not trouble her with idle dreams! a book which will not lead her into the sadness and weariness of the Real, into the thorns of contradiction and discord—a book full of the peace of God!

Spare me here your elaborate discussions on the equality of the sexes. Woman is not only our equal, but in many respects our superior. Sooner or later she will know everything. The question to decide here, is whether she should know all in her first season of love? x

Oh! how much she would lose by it! Youth, freshness, and poetry. Does she wish, at the first blow, to give up all these? Is she in such haste to be old?

There are things upon things to learn. But at every age the woman should know something different from the man. It is less learning that she needs, than the essence of learning and its living elixir.

We by no means deny that a young woman can read and inform herself of everything, can go through all the trials to which the man's mind is subjected, and still remain pure. We merely maintain that her intellect, withered by reading, wearied by novels, living habitually on the stimulation of the play-house, on the aquafortis of criminal trials, will not be corrupted perhaps, but vulgarized, made common-place, like the curb-stone in the street. This curb-stone is a good stone. You have only to break it to see that it is white within. This does not prevent it from being sadly soiled outside, in every respect as dirty as the street gutter by which it is splashed.

Is this, Madame, your idea of her who should be man's temple, the altar of his heart, whence he daily rekindles the flame of pure love?

---

Oh, let us give all to woman! I withhold but one thing—one single reservation:

Give her all that will leave her her freshness and her purity, her charm of young wife-hood, that rather flower of youth and of moral virginity. Leave her that, I pray you, and as long as possible. What shall be given her in exchange for it? What treasure of human wisdom shall console her for being no longer a dream of Heaven?

This will pass away, swiftly enough, and to-morrow it will be over. She will always be good and beautiful, virtuous and accomplished; I have no objection. There is wanting only a certain thing, a breath, which a breath will carry away. And what is that? The *velvet-down* of the soul.

You have, hundreds of times, noticed and admired on the odorous peach (which makes the very roses jealous), a fine, delicate down:—Well, it is not that! That is still too material; that silky down is palpable, may be touched.

I speak of another thing, which may not be handled, of a certain glaze (a light rime, like the white glimmer of the hoar-frost), in which is enfolded the deep violet hues of a savory fruit. Do not touch it, hold it at a distance; for the softest breath already impairs its bloom.

This is the only thing to which I can compare the internal virginity which the young wife preserves in the sanctuary of her heart; the velvet down which surrounds that heart, so pure, so good, so loving!

---

Is this velvet down a flower, a grace, a charm of beauty, of imagination, which intoxicates one's thoughts? It is much more. It guards and covers what will be the strongest support of man, a fruit of tenderness, of infinite bounty, a fruit of youth and of inexhaustible brightness.

The man shall pass through the misfortunes, the crosses of existence; he shall pass over the deserts, the sterility of the world, the stones, the flints, the rocks, on which his feet often bleed! But every evening he shall drink life from this delicious fruit, all full of the

dew of heaven. Every morning, at day-break, he shall awake re-youthed.

---

It is this that we must preserve.

---

## X.

### OF MORAL INCUBATION.

I ONCE heard this conversation between a young couple. They lived in the country; he had returned from the city where he had been arranging his business: "Oh, how long you have been! I have been looking so for you!"—"I've brought you this."—"Thank you; tell me about yourself."—"Our business is in such a condition."—"That is good; tell me about yourself."—"I was told so and so; I met such a person."—"Yes, but tell me about yourself."

Such is the artless heart of the young wife, at least in the beginning. She is not occupied with the news. The bustle of the world, the infinity of little events, which appear important to us, and are forgotten to-morrow, are matters of indifference to her; and if you speak to her of them, she cannot listen. She pretends to do it for a while, out of respect for you; but she cannot keep it up long. Her mind is elsewhere, and she gazes on vacancy. She lives out of the present, in the eternity of her love.

---

She undoubtedly wishes to acquire a science, a single



one, to know one thing ; what ? The heart of her husband.

But this may be immense. A man's heart, strictly speaking, can contain a world. Since she desires no other food, be it your task to expand that heart, that all great and good things may be therein. Thenceforward she will accept all with avidity.

"The lady of Fayal ate one, and said : 'I find it so good, that I will eat nothing else.'"

---

The complete responsibility for the development of woman rests to-day on him whom she loves. She has no longer a public culture. No more grand national fêtes, like those of antiquity, about which, for the whole year, the family thought and talked. As to the religious celebrations brought down from the middle ages, the believers themselves deplore the lukewarmness with which they are attended ; they acknowledge their feebleness. Can the culture of books supply the want ? Not at all. The diffuseness and parcelling out of the serial publications which waste the intellect, have disgusted women, and many of them will read no more.

There remains, then, the living book, the personality of the man, the speech of the beloved. Love is more than ever called upon to merit its great title of The World's Mediator.

---

The whole question is, to evoke by love all that there is in this young being of love, of grace, of thought. In her there sleeps an ocean which must be roused to motion. The most unpretending will respond to the attempt with an unexpected opulence of nature. He

who, without egotism, has thought only of saturating her mind with all that he believes to be beautiful and great, will joyfully find that she yields all to him alone, and loves him with the growing strength of her augmented love. She must be taken where she is, on her true plane, which is to love ever more and more.

You must, in the narrow, concentrated love she has for you, magnanimously inspire her with a sympathetic enthusiasm for the great universal love of life and nature, and in the end, by degrees, with the force of active love, of religious charity, of social sympathy.

She is young, but from this day she must be made and formed for the good things of God, prepared to become what a woman truly is—a power of harmony, of solace, of medication, and of salvation. She cannot yet, at eighteen, acquire all these, but she may acquire the sentiments, the ideas of them. Many positive things, which she can learn to-day, will be useful to her at a later period.

This must be carried on gently, without precipitation. It is not so much a matter of science, and a course of study, as to give, at apposite moments, living germs, which, transplanted, removed from your heart to hers, shall germinate, shall identify themselves with her, and become her very self.

---

It is doubtless difficult to observe this gentle power of germination, of incubation in the woman.

The power of man is in abstracting, in dividing; but the power of the woman is in not knowing how to abstract, in preserving everything, every idea, entire and living, and so to be able to render it more living, and to fructify it.

Nature forbids her dividing and separating. The woman is union itself. She must form a living being, that is to say, one and entire. She cannot say, *two*. "I and my lover are one and the same," she says. And if he impregnates her, it will not make three. No division in her; no plurality. The three are but one.

Your brain, an arsenal of the finest steel blades, contains scalpels which will cut through everything. Anatomy, war, criticism form the intellect of the man. But the organ of the woman is another thing. That sweet organ, which is a second brain to her, dreams only dreams of love. The peace of heaven, the peace of God, union, unity itself, these are the treasures of her heart.

By what means would you have her employ your methods, how seize that rough instrument of analysis? If one of your subtle thoughts should come to her, it is that she, by her maternal process of incubation, has brooded on it for your sake, has put it into herself, has *conceived* it, and of the idea makes a child.

---

That which gives an entirely peculiar character of fecundity to the reveries of the woman, is the manner in which time divides itself to her, not by the artificial division of the calendar, but by natural periods. Her month, of about twenty-eight days, reproduces itself with precisely the same incidents, the same developments, the same catastrophes and *entr'actes*. These conditions, but little varied, give to the following month a mental state analogous to that of its corresponding conditions, and often with the same thoughts. These thoughts, reproduced more than once, strengthened from month to

month, come at last to take form, to sway the entire individual, to fill her to all her capacity of love and passion.

This is what may be observed in the solitary woman, in her whom society does not continually draw out from herself. These returns of the same thought make of her a faithful being, in whom the culture of the heart is aided by nature; and even, however little aided, a progressive being, who, once having received the germ, gives it, at each new epoch, a renewed degree of life, and of warmth.

All is poetry in the woman, but especially this rhythmic life, harmonized in regular periods, as if scanned by nature.

On the contrary, time is to man without any real division; it does not return with new identity. His months are not months; no rhythm in his life. It is projected always before him, stretched out like free prose, but infinitely mobile, unceasingly creating germs, for the most part to be lost.

A few men (who unite the two sexes, and are yet the most powerful of males) have the gift of incubation.

---

What we have just said about the rhythmical life of the woman affects her whole education, and makes it essentially different from that of the man.

Care must be taken to do nothing with her inopportunistly, but to follow the suggestions of nature. If you do this carefully, she will aid you. What an advantage, for example, to commence every experiment of mental initiation in the ascending phase of her sanguine life, when the flood rises, and her sensibility is exalted with a more abundant flow, and a more generous tone! On

the contrary, during her crisis, or the languor in which it leaves her, she should not be fatigued with new ideas, but should be left quietly to recover, to dream, to think over those she has already received.

This should be attended to by the prudent mother, by the wise instructress, who commences the education of the young girl; and by the lover, the husband, who continues that of the young wife. The impregnation of the mind, as well as that of the body, demands that nothing be done but in season, at the most favorable time. For this there is needed a constant and unrelaxing watch over, a tender respect for, the beloved. No violence, no impatience; select her time, her day, her hour.

---

She will repay you for this care. The young wife whom society will not claim from her wedding-day, but who is left by solitude to the contemplation of this solemn epoch, asks nothing but to believe and desire all that her husband wishes her to desire and believe. She is infinitely interesting. The new condition which from the very first has given delight to the man, has almost always aspects still painful for her. He is happy; she will be so. But she is not the less very tender, with disinterested tenderness. You can from this earliest period open your heart to her, talk to her about all the great objects of life, and seriously begin the mastery of her mind.

You will think what I am about to say very minute; but nothing can be too much so on this subject.

Not only the period of the month should be observed, and the condition of mental exaltation preferred to all others, but the state of the weather is also an important matter. I would not have you awkwardly choose for a

confession, or a communion of thought, of new ideas, the moment when she is suffering from the terrors of a tempest. The electricity of life with which she is charged, complicated with that of the air, of a storm, is enough for her to bear; do not annoy her with other matters.

The approach (if not too near) of the sanguineous crisis, when she is in a relaxed condition, is the holy hour I would have you choose to open your mind to her on those grand and weighty questions in which first impressions are of the highest importance: at first a very little, a word, a germ, the first glimmer of an idea, hinted in moments of freest familiarity, or while caressing her.

If your heart has touched her heart, if your idea has truly descended upon her, the approaching crisis of the month, even though it be painful, will efface nothing. On the contrary, an idea is stamped on a woman by suffering. Every thorn, whether of love or of nature, makes it penetrate deeper. The necessary idleness which pain sometimes imposes will admirably nourish the germs which her mind has received.

---

Though still suffering, she will, in the week of agitation which follows the crisis, and the week of interval in which she is entirely calm, busy herself; her hands will work willingly; and so will her mind. Women can do two things at once. Spinning, knitting, embroidery, needle-work, are excellent employments for increasing the activity of their minds. Oh, pleasant little labors, sweet toils, you shall continue despite all the interference of machinery! No intrinsic advantages, no beauty of mechanical workmanship, shall pre-

vail over the pretty trifles which charm away the long hours of a chaste and industrious woman. In them she sews up her gentleness, weaves her love, her dreams; and I always feel therein the warmth of the charming heart which has been blended with them.

---

The French woman, who is called so frivolous, unsteady, is even more capable than other women of this double work. Her dream is not a languishing reverie, vague and uncertain. It is much more a reflecting. At times, for the sake of change, she accompanies a favorite thought, which she pursues within, with little snatches of song in a low tone, which have no connexion with it. But, at moments, a louder strain bursts forth, and shows that under the light carol or the monotonous refrain there is quite another thing, earnest and passionate.

The French woman has not that servile dependence in love which so many women of other countries betray so willingly. Although she may be captivated at heart, obedient, all devotion to the thought of her lover, she still preserves an independence of form and of manner; sometimes you are deceived by it. Something you uttered yesterday from the bottom of your heart; and because she seemed not to take notice of it, you believe it was lost. Undeceive yourself; she has it safe. She has been busy with it all day. And in the evening, after supper, drawing up her chair beside yours by the fire, she repeats it in her own way, in her feminine language, quite different and yet the same. Who knows? those words may take root, and in the approaching period, fructified by the vital flow, may thrive and blossom with thoughts, with new ideas, with

more warmth, more life, I may even say with more love, than in the month before.

---

To submit thus, without submitting, to acknowledge without embarrassment the profound ascendancy of love, and her mental conquest, it is requisite that her gentle pride should be met with favorable occasions, with proper hours, when nature herself is disarmed and yields. Night, or twilight, is much better for this than day-time. Things that she could not have said at mid-day, she will utter in the evening, under a less brilliant light—words that she cannot say at a distance, but which she suffers less to whisper close by—in your ear.

M. de Senancour, who advises that there should be no bed in common, forgets (which is surprising in so thoughtful a mind) that it is the bed which is the conciliator of souls in all weighty and important communications. It is not alone for repose, not alone for pleasure; it is the discreet confidant, the propitious agent for thoughts and words not to be spoken elsewhere. It is the great *communicator*, or better still, a communion.

Religious subjects, for example, the most delicate of all, if discussed in the open day, breed ungentle thoughts—sometimes even dissensions, between the new couple. This is much less apt to be the case when they are spoken of at night and in the bed. There all is softened and harmonized. In the day, one encounters seeming differences, but in the night these disappear, or at least are much less prominent. In spite of these matters of mere form, the pair feel that they are for ever united in love, and the love of God.



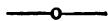
The very large bed of former times, occupying half the chamber, very low, almost on a level with the floor, and surrounded on all sides by thick carpets, is infinitely comfortable. It imposes no constraint. It affords every facility for being together or apart. The conversations in the evening and in the morning become easy; so, too, the intercourse of sweet friendship, as well as of love; the most intimate words, often the least premeditated, escape one's lips, which, perhaps, would never have come from the heart if it had been necessary to throw them from one end of the room to the other.

These indescribable freedoms of repose and of awaking, the facility for words, and for unspoken language, are a natural temptation to the tender sensibility of a delicate young soul, which, long after you believe you possess it, preserves, even against its love, a hesitancy, a contracting or drawing back—I know not what to call it. Is it shame? Is it pride? How shall it be named? Whatever it may be, the man is rarely delicate enough to feel it much. And yet the ice is not entirely broken between you. She, married months ago, is at heart still a girl. Some moral cause is necessary, such is their natural nobility, to compel them to give themselves entirely up. This almost always comes when they have loved and adopted some good sentiment in the man, something sincere, glowing, grand, strong, of which they have caught a glimpse in him. And who has not had moments like these? The very worst have such gleams of light.

Thenceforth she is won by him. The gentle warmth of love which has risen to her heart gives her a little more courage; and in the evening, when he has been

asleep, he has the sweet surprise of finding her still awake. Alert and loving, this silent one suddenly speaks. It is night: she has not dared to speak during the day; but at this time she is often eloquent. She is happy; she believes him to be good, worthy, a man after God's own heart, and in God she loves him. Her heart melts, and she is his wife. From that hour marriage has commenced for her. Thenceforth she can bear his name. We hear no more of the girl of yesterday to-day the wife is born.

*BOOK THIRD*



**OF THE INCARNATION OF LOVE.**



## I.

### CONCEPTION.

Love in woman is an exalted and a noble thing. She stakes her life upon it.

Every time she consents, and yields to man's desire, she testifies her willingness to die for him.

What does he risk? Nothing, except to labor a little more, and to support a child. What does she risk? Everything. She submits not only to the crisis of a terrible agony, in which her life is suspended by a thread, but to the chances of a lingering death, and a thousand infirmities, so cruel that their very author might be shocked by them.

Young man, you who regard love as so pleasant and so trifling a matter, I beg you to obtain and read but a single one of the numerous books afforded by the terrible literature of midwifery, and the diseases which follow child-bed. At the mere enumeration, your arms fall powerless; at the description, a cold perspiration stands upon your forehead; and if you persevere to the horribly-ingenuous surgical details, to the operations (which torture but do not cure), the book falls from your hands. That which is endured by these poor weak creatures, alas! with their bodies, with their flesh, you, a man, can scarcely endure the thought of.

*Love is the Brother of Death.* This has been often said, and said again. But who has yet discovered to what extent he is the *Brother of Pain*?

---

Let these solemn words be inscribed on the threshold of the charming world of Reproduction, into which you imagine you are about to enter as through triumphal arches of garlands and flowers. Read these words, not to recoil (for it is the law of nature), but to understand for once the supreme beauty of woman. She accepts every peril—death, the depths of suffering—to give to him she loves an infinity of joy, the life of centuries compressed into an instant, the epitome of eternity.

“Be happy, though I should die! Be happy one second, though I should for ever suffer!” These are the words she has in her heart. And yet she has the generosity not to utter them to you; it would sadden you too much, it would cool your ardor, if that cruel name of death, which is in the depths of her heart, should come up to her lips among your kisses.—No, she will keep it all to herself.—To you the heaven, to you the joy! To her the dark foreshadowings, and the terrors of the future.

---

Unselfish devotion! It is a vain stupidity, too common in man, to suppose that woman yields herself, overcome by physical love. This error may be pardoned in children and in novices, but it is very absurd in those who have had any experience. Whoever knows woman knows very well that, with almost all, there is in this act only kindness and compliance. In our refined age, the generating crisis distresses them very little. This cold

ness results from two causes: from their vast expenditure of nervous force in affability and conversation; and, on the other hand, too often from the unhealthy waste of life going on in them, even during the intervals between the regular crises of nature.

To state the matter frankly, even should the man's pride suffer by it: they comply almost always wittingly, in order to fulfil their destiny as woman, to insure the love of the man, and to create a family; they submit from the exalted necessity implanted in them, of sacrificing themselves.

---

The great physiologist, Burdach, our illustrious master, makes this beautiful and just remark: "In the animal races, the nobility of the female appears in this: that she does not seek a mate except for the purpose of generation." And still another trait: "The male is fierce before pleasure, in the blindness of his savage desire; but if the female is fierce it is only after pleasure, and during her maternity, to protect her young."

•The child is the recompense, the precious prize for the sufferings and the perils which love has brought to the woman. "It is to her the prize of pleasure," worthily says Virgil. But, even without this hope, the wife can devote herself. Fruitful or not, she accepts the sovereign duty of woman—that of renewing, of re-animating the man. She is the *Fountain of life* (Genesis), but she is so in two senses. If she does not give it to a child, she gives it to her husband.

Ah, how little did the shameful and subtle science of the scholastics, who spoke so senselessly of these things, seeking in them only libertinism, suspect their holy gra-

\*

vity! they saw nothing of the earnestness, the danger, the devotion, which is the foundation of it all, nor the profound bartering of life which is the true mystery of it.

Our age, the age of labor, understands very well that the laborer, the producer of all things, who gives his life and his soul to it, has need of constantly recovering that life from nature. The wife is in no wise ignorant that she is nature herself: that is to say, reparation, consolation, happiness, and joy. She is the prize of the day, the charm of the evening and of repose. In her alone man finds oblivion: oblivion profound as death, which daily regenerates him. He revives—through whom, if not her? But how shall she renew his life? By hazard—her own. She sees him blind in his joy, but she makes him none the less the arbiter of her fate, gives him full control over her. The generous security of a pure heart which is doing its duty puts aside all care; and she smiles in peace, risking only life. Nor does she love him any the less for this—ah, what do I say? even more, for her sacrifice and her danger; all that he abstracts in passion, she gives him in redoubled love.\*

---

The wise and the foolish will tell you that all this is instinctive, that in her self-devoting the woman follows the blind enthusiasm of her nature, etc. Generally it is exactly the contrary. She has very little ardor, much serenity and tenderness. It is the man who loves in gusts; she in perfect calm.

I blush to write this, but it is too *true*, and must be acknowledged. Man's love is manifested much too often at night from the base excitement caused by a luxurious banquet, especially after winter and autumn feasts, when



the harvest is in, the granaries full, and the grapes gathered. Thence come those numerous conceptions of the winter months, begotten infamously, without love, upon the wife submissive, but not consulted.

With her, on the contrary, if at times she feels the spark divine, it is at dreamy and poetic hours, in gentle awakings, in the morning, above all in the spring time, when God wills her to love, and when a breath of that fruitfulness which is the duty of nature, reanimates both the woman and the flower.

---

Woe unto the children of darkness, the sons of drunkenness, who were, nine months before their birth, an outrage on their mothers !

He who is born of a nocturnal orgie, of the very forgetfulness of love, of a profanation of the beloved one, will drag out a sad and troubled life.

On the contrary, it is a sublime, a mighty blessing to be conceived in the light, when a man's love is directed, not to the sex indiscriminately, not to any woman whatsoever, but to this single woman, to this heart which belongs to him, saying : "*She*, and no other ;" when it is mirrored in her smile, in her beautiful quiet eyes, which reflect the dawn on him—in her charming surprise, and her artless impulse, which say : " Yes, yes, I was dreaming of you."

The profound and perfect harmony of the heart, the exquisite sense that love, in its most obscured moments and its hidden light, preserves of the loved object, is that which produces divine fruit—a son of liberty and of light. Both are *desirous*. It is doubtless of the most elevated voluntary love that heroes have been born.

But now the day is becoming brighter ;—he has gone business has called him away. The young wife rises, modestly, not without dignity, but a little strange to herself. . . . “Am I truly myself?” she asks. “Yes, certainly—Great mystery! I have done my duty, and yet I am disturbed!

“Ah, wrong, wrong for thee to be so, pure diamond! which of us can boast of being as pure?” So say the last stars, fading out in the morning-hour. They look down smilingly on her, the innocent one, as she walks, agitated, in her little garden.

The exquisitely transparent and limpid waters of the fountain from which she asks a little to refresh herself, those waters in which heaven is mirrored, say to her: “Chaste wife! would to heaven that our waves, in which you think to purify yourself, were as pure as thy bosom!”

“But after all,”—she says to herself very low—so low that she is almost afraid of her own voice—“was I not too happy? . . . And in that solemn moment, it may be of an infinite future, did I lift my soul above? God willed it, God ordained it. Did I preserve the thought of God in my mind?”

“Ah, dear sister,” murmur the flowers, as they bend to the ground to kiss her footsteps, “who would not be softened by thy tender heart? . . . Oh, that we might breathe the sweet perfume that emanates from thee! . . . Do as we do, oh young flower! open in peace thy innocent bosom; grudge not that the dew of heaven swells thy chaste chalice. After, even as before love, we are, and, we remain, pure.”

## II.

### PREGNANCY, AND THE STATE OF GRACE.

WE have said that woman is, indeed, Fruitful Life. Whatever she thinks of, is a living thing for her, and her idea is a child.

We know now why to certain words she is so indifferent, to others so alive. She is susceptible and sensible only of an idea which can be incarnated. This she takes, makes her own, sketches it out like a living dream, endows it with her desires. Let the breath of love pass over it, and the dream is embodied, and becomes a child.

Of whatever you give her, which is abstract, general, collective, she makes an individual. If you speak to her of patriotism, of a free and heroic community, already she has conceived its hero—the hero in action, in art, or in science—the renovator, the creator, the strong arm, the fruitful hand, which shall lavish unheard of benefits on the human race. All this obscurely and indefinitely. She hardly knows herself what she would desire, but leaves it all to Providence. God will know what is best to do. It is enough for the mother to know—and she is almost sure of it—that the child is a miracle, a saviour, a messiah.

---

She has never dared to speak of it, not even in her bed, not even at the encouraging hour when kind Night hides all, and allows so much to be said. She has not

## 156 Pregnancy, and the State of Grace.

dared. If he had laughed! what a cruel wound that would be to her! No; that sublime hope is the only thing that woman does not tell him whom she loves. She has a little bashfulness, a secret shame, of her divine romance.

I will tell you in confidence: it was this of which she was thinking the other day when her husband, returning before his usual time, found her serious, agitated, as if she had been surprised in something which she wished to conceal. He sought for it, he endeavored to discover what it was, but she embraced him in silence.

She, so discreet, and so unimpassioned, is herself astonished at the involuntary flight her imagination has taken. She does not know that her folly is the highest wisdom. It was the exaltation of our mothers, their effort to conceive an infant God, that has made you and me the little that we are; it is this dream that has given us the best that is in us. And if any is strong upon earth, it is because a woman conceived him in heaven.

---

This, if I may say so, was the solitary conception of the woman, between her and herself, while she was still mistress of her thoughts, still free and light, before the night when the Omnipotent God, the All-powerful Realizer, surprised her in her ethereal dream, and caught her in his storm. And now all is changed. She feels a dull heat, and sudden chills, shiverings, run through her body; her beautiful neck is swollen; her bosom is agitated and tumid; but this time the wave does not retire; the billow remains suspended, her breasts become enlarged, and lower down there is delineated—a shadow!—an undefined outline, like a new world.

## Pregnancy, and the State of Grace. 157

A painful turgidness weighs her down. Even her head is a little weakened; that winged soul is for a moment borne down and oppressed by the body. She has no longer the free and sure direction of her motions. She vacillates, hesitates, wavers—what is there surprising in that? He himself, the blind author of the miracle is almost as much disturbed as she. He is agitated, he is enraptured, but uneasy too, on seeing her launched on that great sea whereon he cannot follow her. She is beyond his power, beyond his protection. What terror for him who loves! He sees her fatally advancing, day by day, towards the fulfilment of this mystery. He can do nothing but make propitiation, pray, and clasp his hands, like a suppliant at the altar. A boundless devotion for this living temple has seized upon him. Before that divine globe, which contains the unknown world, he dreams, he is hushed; if he smiles, the smile is almost a tear.

Let no one accuse him of weakness. If ever a paroxysm of religion deserve respect, it is surely in this case. We are actually in the presence of the grandest miracle—an incontestable miracle, with nothing absurd in it, but which is not the less obscure. Every human being is a miracle, shut in by an insuperable barrier. Yet she has broken through it. It is a double prodigy—the formation of the child, the transformation of the mother. The impregnated wife becomes man. Invaded by the male force, when it has once seized upon her, she will gradually yield to it. The man will gain on her, will pervade her. She will be *himself*, more and more.

One or two years will suffice for a soft and delicate

## 158 Pregnancy and the State of Grace.

silkeness, like the blossom of an ear of corn, to bloom on her lip. Her voice, too, will be changed. She often loses the high, and gains deeper, tones (but of such wondrous sweetness!). And how many other changes! The involuntary imitation of him she has at the bottom of her being manifests itself unconsciously to her, in her manner and her movements. You would not know her; but only to look at her walk, to hear her speak, to see her smile (despite a certain softness, and a fragility of form), you would say: "I recognise him in his wife, and her in him."

---

Profound, marvellous union! Especially in these first months of pregnancy, when the new life, begun within, does not yet reveal itself to her, except by the confusing disturbance of a great fluctuation, she tells everything to him who has injured her, by whom she suffers, and whom she loves so much the more. Internally she feels that it is he who burns, who circulates in her. Externally, she takes him as her only support, leans on him, complains to him, and is as if suspended to him. She wishes (and he even more than she), that he shall pity her, spoil her, envelope her with the most tender cares. In return, she abandons herself entirely to him, she is ~~thoroughly~~ a good child. She becomes his little daughter, and lets him attend her like a child. If at first she forbids it, if it is a little in spite of her, what can she do? She has no power, no wish to refuse; she submits, since he demands it; and not with much trouble, for she finds it very pleasant.

While waiting for the child to come, she can surely take his place. And, what is rather strange, she, but

now so serious, feels nothing disagreeable in this new rôle. The liberties which the woman finds so sweet in her little innocent, she knows well that he who loves her thinks delightful in her. She knows that everything in her enraptures him, that he is so delighted with the unrestrained felicity to which she abandons herself, that to insure it to her he must shut his eyes. Among other natural peculiarities a woman has at this time, she loves now and then to hide herself, to withdraw apart, in order to prove to herself that she is truly independent, and that the dear tyrant, who so follows her in heart, does not enwrap her too much. She obeys this, and retires, at most only smiling. She, on her part, is not ignorant that in pretending to observe nothing, he sees it all. No matter, she is pleased with him for being so considerate and so good. Charming, innocent game, in which no one is deceived, and no one deceives! Ridiculous, do you say? Ah, no! Leave them this child's play of the State of Grace.

---

To tell you the truth, madame, if this man spoils you, there is no merit in it, for we are all like him. For you, all of us (I am not speaking of friends, but of strangers, men, everybody, all nature) are agreed to love, to overwhelm you with votive offerings, to bless you. Our houses are at your service. Take the flowers, and the fruit; anything you may desire. We shall be only too happy!

But you shall go no farther; come into my house, I beg you. Deign to rob me, madame; rob me in preference to the others. I do not know what old custom it is which allows the pregnant woman to take three

## 160 Pregnancy and the State of Grace.

pears, or three apples; but it is too few. Oblige me by taking the whole garden. That is, if you like.

But, clumsy fellow that I am, what have I said?—I have spoiled all. She enters, and she is now full of shame, will have nothing more, averts her eyes. Her charming little mouth plainly says: “You should have seen nothing.”

I cannot forgive myself, I am disconsolate—for she will listen no more to me; she passes out, and walks away, blushing, and lowering her eyes.

---

It was the stealthiness of the thing which tempted her. For she knows very well that all is for her; that she can do anything she pleases, and it will always be right. She brings infinitely more than she can carry away, for she brings peace, love, a fragrance of felicity. You cannot see her without smiling, but it is a smile of beatitude; it is as if you had seen happiness itself; and after it you are happy all day.

Wherever she deigns to set her foot, law ceases. And the law entreats her to command. Her caprice is the law; her whim, wisdom—her folly, reason.

---

If she, the innocent daughter of God, should sin (a thing impossible!), her fault would come to our hearts so slight, so softened, rather as another charm! The only little sin which she perhaps must acknowledge, is that agitated virtually by an atom, but one so greedy, she is greedy herself; and if she consulted only herself, if she dared to do it, she would follow this blind impulse. You are happy to see her eat much, eat always, often sily and in secret. Unwisely indulged,



this impulse may injure her. Her husband should beseech her to deny herself a little. He yields too much to the enjoyment of seeing her enlarged life, her dazzling beauty, so solemnly splendid. See! it is not her waist alone that is enlarging. Her beautiful arms, her white shoulders, her bosom, all expand in voluptuous curves; and her whole person is in flower.

It was on St. John's day, I think, in 1825, that I was making a visit to an old friend at Saint-Cloud. The wife of the charming painter, Madame B——, who was a neighbor, and like one of the family, entered without being announced. The door opened quickly, and the room seemed to me to be suddenly filled with light and with flowers. I was dazzled. She threw off her straw hat, and cast down an immense bouquet she had just gathered in the fields. Although far advanced in pregnancy, she had done all this in a moment, with the vivacity of a young girl, and a spoiled child, sure of being approved by all.

She was in person very large, and in the positive plenitude of life. Her powerful electricity, which overflowed everything, prevented me from hearing what she said. What I understood best, was the light of life, of happiness and of goodness, which gushed forth from her eyes.

I lowered mine, and became sad. Again I raised them, and looked at her. Then, strengthened in heart, I took my leave, and sauntered back to Paris.

That oriental hymn, the true chaunt of the infinite, passed through my mind amidst its whirl of emotion.

"Oh sun! oh sea! oh rose! . . . . ."

"The circle of existence is fulfilled and finished in thee!"

### III.

#### THE RESULT OF PREGNANCY.—THE RIVAL

FRIENDS should be true to each other. I ought to tell you frankly, without subterfuge—you have a rival. “Great God!”—yes, a preferred rival. She loves you, and will always love you. But you must resign yourself to this fact: you are no longer her first thought.

Among the peculiarities which we remark in her, the strongest (not equal in all women) is that, at first, when she feels herself so invaded by you, so subjugated by you, she has weak little desires of contradiction, infantile refractorinesses, freaks of resistance. Her instinctive liberty timidly reclaims her from her full engulfment by love.

Love laughs at this, thinking to engross it with all the rest. He believes so, and he deceives himself. As everything in her is loving, the timid resistance was nothing but the new life which bubbled in her breast. The graceful little rebellion was no other than your child.

---

There is another man, another soul, another will, which doubles, and troubles too at moments, that dear heart, which believes it could never wish for another beside you. He is there, and he demands her. From the depths of the sea of milk, from the darkness in which he sleeps, he already influences, already works upon her. His world, that poor suffering, agitated world that contains him, he will soon govern; and

## The Result of Pregnancy.—The Rival. 163

already at the fifth month, he has knocked at the door, and cried strongly: "I am here!"

"I have felt him!" she cries, placing her trembling hand on the spot where he has rapped, "He moves; he is indeed living! . . . There he is again; he is restless. Ah! my child, you have done me harm! But, O God what good too!"

From this hour he is her thought. She never escapes from him. To dream of him, to follow him, to watch for him, to note his movements, to wait for him, is all her life. Nor does he fail her at the rendezvous. He is her inseparable lover. Still, if she is unfaithful to you, she does not conceal it; she talks incessantly of him. How can it be otherwise? This progressive creation of one being within another is so absorbing, that the mother has nothing in herself to which she can withdraw, by which she can defend herself against him. And she shows no discretion in thinking of him. For, if his sudden movements do make her suffer every moment, she still enjoys the harmony of so profound a marriage. The tremblings of this sweet fruit are not always painful. She fancies easily that he already loves his mother. Sometimes her countenance lights up; she blushes—he has passed by.

She tells you all, or almost all. You are the happy confidant of their innocent amours. You take part in, and have a third share in them. But in her life, henceforward filled to this point with another being, what a little place have you! He is now the predominant, exclusive, only interest. What he desires you desire; and what he fears, you fear. Four months before he is born he is master of the house.

.

## 164 The Result of Pregnancy.—The Rival

The husband always gives way to, must always give way to, the father. Every habit, every pleasure, is sacrificed in this crisis. Ah! who would contradict her, annoy her, give her trouble? Shall she not rather be surrounded with objects of joy, be cheered, be made happy, and smiling? Gain this at any price.

Still the man is always the man. He does not easily alter his life from its very foundation. And so there are little disturbances, I do not say of jealousy in such a heart as yours, but perhaps of a slight sadness; and you make some complaints. She does not wish to hear them. For the first time, she evades you; she would rather not listen to you; she goes apart. She does not go very far, she does not flee very swiftly, and has no fear of being rejoined. And, half-returning, with the tenderest smile, albeit a little malicious, she says: "Why, my dear, if *he* does not wish me to love you, what shall I do?" She wishes to try you. Perhaps the proof is a little harsh. She sees you aggrieved, and she hastens to console you. Divided between two duties, she submits to the one without neglecting the other. But if *he* does not suffer, does not recall her, the little tyrant will obey in everything; and, far from complaining, will say: "Ah, how happy I am! In loving him, it is you alone that I love. And through him I have the happiness of belonging the more to you."

In love all is worthy, all royal. Nothing elevates her more than her free servitudes, her voluntary humiliations. She was never more a queen than in this abnegation, when submitting to the exigencies of an inexorable love. Restless and uneasy, but unspotted, she leaves all to God. Her sufferings, the imminence of

## The Result of Pregnancy.—The Rival. 165

the approaching peril, bring to her the most solemn thoughts. In moments of happiness in which you, a little selfishly, embrace her (the dear slave of devotion and self-sacrifice), if you could see her face you would perhaps experience a pang of regret at finding it so calm and so exalted, so full of the light of heaven.

She is timorous, she is fearful certainly, in these latter days, but it is especially the fear of doing wrong. She confesses herself the sacred instrument of eternal creation, and that in transmitting to her child her blood and her life, she at the same time transmits her soul. And so we have a constant scruple, a touching heedfulness, to preserve that soul pure and holy.

Would to heaven we could give her a book which might sustain her, or some sufficing prayer—but not to ask of God that he will change anything in His laws; on the contrary, she desires only to harmonize herself with those laws, with the infinite order, and to do all as God wills.

Her true strength, in this path in which she is walking alone and trembling, should be you, if you are able to control passion by love, and not humble her continually to the dust. This is a solemn time. Her day draws near. You must think much of it, treat her tenderly, spare her. Ah! will Death spare her?

Have pity on us, O Death!



## IV.

## CONFINEMENT.

If you would see an image of fear, look at that man in this awful moment—frank fear, not concealed, too strong to be contained, which expresses itself by signs that would be absurd, if they were not so touching. I have seen men, and they too the most haughty, tearing their beards in desperation. Haggard, pale, exhausted, they could not but excite pity. Even the sick woman, in the midst of her agony, had to say: “Courage, dear, courage! Are you such a coward?”

The woman lives in the child, but the man lives in the woman. In this truly formidable hour he presses close to her, he clasps her two hands in his, as if they would escape him. But her hands hold on by nothing—she is subject to another power which draws her away, drags her from his side. At intervals she looks around the world in which she still remains, at the anxiety of the assistants, at that distracted man; but it seems to him, already, as if she were gazing from the other shore.

The crisis continues. The doctor shakes his head, walks up and down, is not self-assured; and the husband follows him like a dog. Fear has humbled him. His cowardice—his flatteries, his quick and sudden friendship for one whom he scarcely knew before, but who holds her life in his hands, are the most curious things imaginable. The husband, once so jealous, is so no longer. He unhesitatingly unveils to a stranger that dear and

honored person. He does not even inquire if she suffers from this profanation. He assumes a severe expression, and scolds her for her modest hesitation. In short, he is absurd, imbecile, a complete idiot.

---

She has said the most reasonable things to him in regard to this matter; but fear will listen to nothing. She has told him that in the great work of woman, woman only is a useful auxiliary. That the presence of a man may on the contrary be the greatest obstacle—an obstacle absolutely insurmountable by some, even should they die for it.

Observe, that in the majority of cases all the skill consists in watching, with folded arms. If the child presents in a bad position, if dexterity be required, a woman's little hand, her adroitness, her habits of touching minute objects, all are most certainly better suited to it than a man's great paws. What hand can be soft enough, what manipulation delicate enough, to handle (great heaven!) the most tender object, terribly painful from such excess of tension, to touch the rents and wounds of that poor bleeding body!

Woman can nurse woman much the best. Why? Because she is at once patient and physician, because she can easily understand in another the pains she herself has felt, the trials she herself has undergone. Doctors are learned in science, but know very little of patients. There is scarcely one of them who has a clear understanding of a being so delicate, so full of mystery, in whom the nervous life is all in all.

Our physicians are a very enlightened class of men, and, in my opinion, incomparably the first in Europe.

No others know so much, nor with such certainty. None are so well trained in mind and character. But, after all, their rude masculine education in schools and hospitals, their severe surgical initiation, one of the glories of this country, are all qualities which involve a grave deficiency in this department. They result in the extinction, in them, of that refined sensibility which alone can perceive, foresee, divine the truths of the feminine mystery. The breast of the woman, that sweet miracle, on which nature has exhausted her tenderness, who but woman herself can touch it without impiety?

The fault is not in the physicians, who, I think, will appreciate this. It is owing to the weakness of the man rather than of the woman, at such times; it is the husband's fault, and nothing can reassure him but the presence of the doctor. I do not gainsay this. Although so many illustrious midwives, the Boivins, the Lachapelles, and others, might certainly suffice to tranquillize; although the testimony of Europe, through the whole extent of which they are preferred, might also calm our fears, there is nothing to prevent our consulting the doctor and profiting by his advice, provided that he does not officiate, and that he is not too near. His direct intervention is much less calculated to aid than to paralyse nature.

Women should be listened to. And they say frankly (when one ventures to press them on so delicate a matter) that all their strength, in this act of violent exertion, consists in the *liberty* of the exertion, and that this liberty is as nothing if a man is in the room. From this cause, at every moment, hesitation results, and contradictory movements. They desire and they do not desire.



They exert and they restrain themselves. You will say they are in the wrong, that they should be at ease, should, in such a crisis, forget their superstitions of shame and fear, the little annoyances which so humiliate them. But, however this may be, such they are; as such they must be treated. And he who, to save them, will put them in such peril, is certainly a fool.

---

My dissertation grows too long; it is done. An unnatural cry, which is not of this world, which is not of our race, it would seem—a sharp, shrill, savage cry, pierces our ears. A little bleeding mass has fallen among us. . . . .

And this then is man! . . . . . Welcome, poor shipwrecked soul!—She was exhausted, but she suddenly opens her eyes, “Oh my child, are you then here!”

And holding out her hand to her half-dead husband, “I was resigned to it,” she says, “I accepted death for you.”

---

Here is now a solemn compact between them, entered into on that day—a truly earnest marriage; the contract of suffering!

She loves him, and holds him now by a bond that pleasure never formed; she loves him, branded by him with an ineffaceable mark; she loves him for the blood she pours out, and for her lacerated flesh; for her awful sundering when the very frame of her being seemed about to dissolve.

And he, he loves her for the anguish, and the agony of terror, in which he was plunged, with no strength left him, more shattered than she, and more haggard

than at the grave. He has been mastered by terror and by pity to-day. The weak has vanquished the strong. She has branded him, in her own way, with an ineffaceable mark of fear and agony.

What a bond is this, of dying together—I should say of having, together, seen and felt death so near.

---

And it is not yet over. The fear is not yet banished. Behold her there in her laces, pale and beautiful, with a touching grace. Ah, if you but knew, in truth, the terrible reality which that beauty hides!

You must face all, oh man! These impressions are salutary. It is well that you should know Love, the great master of Pain.

“No; have pity,” you say, “leave us our poetry; the horrible is not poetical. What would become of her if the shocking image of her torn entrails was depicted to her?”

Let us spare her that sight; but you must endure it, and it will do you good.

Nothing so strains the feelings as this. Whoever has not been accustomed, inured to these sad spectacles, is hardly master of himself when he sees a perfect representation of the matrix after delivery. A shivering agony seizes him, and freezes the marrow in his bones. The fearful irritation of the organ, the turbid torrent which exudes so frightfully from the devastated abyss! oh! what a horror!—he shrinks back. . . .

This was my experience when this truly terrible object was shown to me for the first time in the excellent plates of Bourgery’s work. A matchless engraving in the atlas of Coste and Gerbe also represents the same

organ under a less terrible form, but which still affects one to tears. It is shown at the time when, with its intricate plexus of red fibres, which appear like silk, or purple hair, the matrix weeps tears of blood.

These several plates of Gerbe (the majority not signed), this unique astonishing atlas, is a temple of the future, which, in a later and a better time, shall fill every heart with religion. You should throw yourself on your knees before daring to look upon it.

The great mystery of generation has never before appeared in art in all its charm, in its true sacredness. I do not know who is the wonderful artist. It makes no difference; I thank him. Every man who had a mother will thank him.

He has given us the form, the color, but better than all, the softness and delicacy of style, the tragic grace of these things, and their profound emotion. Is it but imitation! or has he, too, felt this? I do not know, but such is the effect.

Oh, sanctuary of grace, made to purify all our hearts, how much you reveal to us!

We learn first of all, that Nature, while lavishing so many beauties on the outside, has bestowed the grandest within. The most thrilling are concealed, as if swallowed up in the very depths of life itself. And we learn here too, that love is a visible thing. The tenderness our mothers lavished on us, their dear caresses, and the sweetness of their milk, all, all is recognised, is felt, is divined, and adored, in this unutterable sanctuary of love and of agony.

## V.

## LYING-IN AND CONVALESCENCE.

**BEFORE** and during the lying-in, the usual company, the conversation of the sick nurses, of the neighbors and others, is generally injurious, even dangerous to the sick woman. They are garrulous, and inconsiderate in the use of their tongues, and often irritate a spirit so shattered as this, with disagreeable matters. Sometimes it is gossip, scandal, and a hundred little nonsensical details, which produce useless disturbances. Sometimes it is mischievous accounts of terrible accidents, of bad signs, of miracles, of absurd recipes, etc. At any other time she would not listen to them, would compel them to be silent. But now, enfeebled, passive as she is, she receives a gloomy impression only too readily, and keeps it to herself. All this, among the women, takes place, of course, in the absence of her husband; let him return, and they are hushed.

Yet the prime condition essential to her recovery is perfect tranquillity of mind. The presence of a stranger at this time will be no benefit to her; how much less that of a thoughtless babbler and fool who, in her capacity of nurse, deranges the order of the house, makes everything subservient to her ways, and gives more trouble than the invalid herself. The familiar servant, the good country girl, simple, kind, obeying the doctor's orders to the very letter without a question, would certainly have been preferable. Silence

would then have been insured, and nothing would be altered. But the nurse, with whom I would be best satisfied, is undoubtedly the husband; he, with the assistance of this girl, can easily do everything.

I know very well that he is busy, that he has but little time. He must, he *must* make time—now, or never.

You should obtain leave of absence; you should postpone all business not absolutely imperative. The danger is not yet over, and it may be much more imminent. She looks beautiful and smiling, as she lies dressed, in her bed. Death is nevertheless very near. A door or a window opened inopportunately, food given at the critical moment of the suppurating fever, a rude shock, may unsettle, may shatter her. A few hours, and all will be over.

Even this devoted servant may, from her ignorance, or perhaps in obedience to a whim of the invalid, strike the fatal blow in your absence. Truly, I can rely on no one but you.

First of all, understand that your presence alone is a sovereign remedy. When you are with her, she is tranquil, perfectly calm; she falls asleep. In your absence, she is not well; if she sleeps, it is only an uneasy slumber; the strange nurse, who is put there for the express purpose of watching over her, the sick woman, on the contrary, feels the necessity of watching. Even the good servant, a little awkward, puts her out of patience. And though she were skilful, all that one could desire, she cannot supply your place. It is the loved hand, and none other, that she needs in a hundred little services. She must have by her side the dear one for whom she

suffers, and make him suffer a little; she must complain to him, and be pitied by him; in short, even if she wants for nothing, does not talk, is even sleeping, she must know you are near her.

---

“But shall I be competent for this position of nurse?” Yes, you will. You do not know your talents and accomplishments yet. You do not know all you are capable of. If you are not restrained by the pride of man’s so-called dignity (ridiculous, aye, guilty, in so delicate a crisis), I assure you you will discover an unexpected skill, an unwonted tact, which will excite shame and envy in the most experienced nurse.

There is little, very little to do (much more not to do, to avoid). The doctor has traced out the way for you, and she, your wife, in case of need, will supply the deficiency in a few words. It will be a pleasure, a very great pleasure, for her to direct you, and a source of amusement to see you at work. The clumsy ways of another would irritate her, but yours put her in good humor; your patience will please her, will fill her with perfect serenity, even hilarity. What matters it? A man of spirit who really loves is only too happy in such a case to see impressions made, so favorable to her health.

If your vanity suffers from it, so much the better. You deserve that, and much more. Who has sinned, if not you? Since she has suffered so much for you, it is only just that you should endure in your turn, that you should do a little penance.

And are you, besides, sick of waiting on a sweet woman, who, if it were not for this occurrence, would perhaps

never have been willing to resign herself so completely to you? You should bless your fate! How many men would envy you for it! Everything that comes from her is a boon.

---

Exalt yourself, my friend, to the dignity of your situation. A good heart and a stout courage know how to make all circumstances honorable. The man naturally distinguished with a true nobility, dignifies every duty, and imparts a certain stateliness, a certain pleasing grace, to that which, in the hands of another, would not appear susceptible of it.

What happiness for her! and how will she be tranquillized and soothed, in finding you there so zealous, so nimble at everything! To tell the truth, the poor darling, if she does at times laugh at you, is a little ridiculous herself. Do you know what was her fear in her greatest danger (the common fear of women, all alike in this)? Death? No. Suffering? No. Even though that was awful; another thought possessed her. What was it? I shall tell you, for you would never guess it: The fear of displeasing, or in some way repelling, of being offensive.

To whom? To all; to the doctor, to the nurse, to her very maid, who is like her own child, and for whom she cherishes such hearty regard.

For the first time the young wife feels herself completely bound down in bed, incapable of helping herself. She is not at her ease with anyone. All embarrass her. What will become of her without you?

It is too true that the best mistress, the most refined, the most worthy to be beloved, is never assured that cer-

tain things will be received by her servant. Even her perilous and affecting situation does not deter the latter from being sulky behind her back. The invalid understands this very well, and there is only one being to whom she is quite sure of being always delightful, always sweet, and charming in all respects.

It is one of the chief delights of the all-powerful master, Love, to transform everything ; especially to change, to pervert, and to transpose the senses. There is no doubt that whatever is unpleasant to those who do not love, is agreeable to those who do. Which is wrong ? I do not know. Are our usually cold, calm, mournful feelings, which declare this or that object disagreeable, certain to be in the right when opposed to the superior senses to which every manifestation of nature is a charm and a delight ?

An original engraving, by a master of the seventeenth century, the facetious Abraham Boss, shows this very naturally. A pretty woman is in bed (recently confined no doubt), sick, but evidently cheerful. Her old grumbling servant is shuffling around the room, groaning over a nurse's little annoyances. But there is a pendant to this. It represents the husband, a young and elegant cavalier, in the full costume of the time, freshly starched, hatted and plumed, equipped with sword and spurs, having a Spanish countenance, dark, resolute, soldier-like. Armed not with the sword, however, but with the peaceful badge of his new calling, he stands in a triumphant attitude, making himself ready for his task ; and for the rest, full of inspiration and of spirit, his hair flying, handsome as a man leading an assault. It is easy to see that he hesitates at nothing that he will carry the affair



successfully, that he has genius for the thing—love and dexterity.

---

To be able to do nothing, to wait for everything, to live entirely by the beloved hand, to receive food, and every other necessary from it, is a more perfect identification of two beings than even that of the child at the bosom of its mother. For the infant does nothing, but receives without volition. *She* does not wish to do anything but to receive, and she does receive, enjoying this state of infancy with all her heart and all her mind.

He is her complete world; she does not love, she does not move, except in him. Her lovely, loving, languishing eyes follow him as he moves about the chamber, walking lightly on tiptoe. She will not drink from any hand but his. Soon she will not eat but from his hand. Even the involuntary organs of animal life—as for example, the stomach—have become so strongly habituated, that, without him, they will refuse to act. “He is not here—I will wait till he comes.”

One admirable result of this single life in two persons is this: that the well half exerts a powerful physical influence to the advantage of the sick half. She loves him with her feebleness and her sickness; he loves her with his health, his cheerfulness, his hope. It is the healthy, the confident one, that sways the other; he draws her on as by the influence of a superior magnetism, and leads her back to life.

---

What a joy it is when she can leave her bed, when they show her her garden, and the changes they have made in it for her, when the sun smiles on her, and her

dumb pets leap with happiness at seeing her again ; when, at length, for the first time, they draw up her large arm-chair to the table, and her place, so sadly vacant, is occupied again.

She recovers her spirits, and her harmony, always through you. Weak as she is, she keeps her eyes fixed long on yours, drawing from them happiness, health, strength, renewing that union which forms your lives ; and then she tenderly says : "Through you I am myself again."

---

What more can be done for her who has suffered so much ? One thing, one only, will recompense her. We are still too uncivilized for it ; but it will certainly be a sacrament in the future. A lady suggested the idea to me. "The highest happiness for the mother," said she, "is, after her recovery, forty days, or more, as the case may be, to take her husband's arm, and in company with the whole family, and all the kindred and friends, to carry her child herself to the altar (required, by a law of '91, to be erected in the commune), to announce its name to the magistrate, and by this means give it a place in the community, and introduce it to life."

"I am very sure that at the sight of such a train of friends, everyone would follow as a friend. There would not be a passer-by but would take his place in the procession, but would wish to be of it, that he might do honor to the mother, that he might thank her for being a mother, and congratulate and bless her."

---

They return, and her tenderness for her husband expresses itself by an outburst of love and of gratitude.

"Here I am then, still at home! I know well it is you who have given me life; it is you who have given me my child!"

Seated in the sun, with him at her feet, she—the white rose—bends over him, and says: "What can I give you? you have me, I have kept nothing back. Still, if I can do anything, here I am! Demand even impossibilities; I will perform them." "You wish me to? Well, I demand"—"Oh, anything, everything!" "Give me, then, a yet deeper place in your heart!" "How can I do that? you are myself; we have ceased to be two."

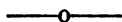
But he insists: "You have told me of the past—what you did, suffered, desired, . . . and I loved you the more for it. What I ask of you now is your thoughts of the future. Promise me that you will tell me your dreams, your cares, if you have any, your caprices (ah! who has them not?), your griefs, the causes of complaint you have against me. And if, at length, fate ordains that the light of love shall pass away from you, if you are troubled, ill for one moment—take me for your physician. You will find in me abundant stores of compassion and indulgence. We will put our strength together. Still united, we will seek, in that trial, the aid of God and of reason."

But she laughs: "Is that all, my darling? That is very easy for her who thinks only of you!"

Then, leaning on him, in a close embrace, she says. "You have been my lover, my husband; to you I have given my body and my life;—aye, even more!—my life before I saw you; for I have told you all my little secrets. You have been my physician, my tender nurse,

and my indulgent guardian. And so you see me through and through, as if a ray of the sun had lighted up my body and my soul. And what do you see there? Yourself. I feel I am transformed into you. How can you help seeing whatever is in this heart, in this body, since they are yours? The faintest germ, the dimmest dawn of a sentiment, when it is born you shall seize with me, and even sooner." And, joining hands with him: "Dearest, be assured you shall know my soul, even before it has thought."

*BOOK FOURTH.*



ON THE LANGUISHING OF LOVE.



# 1.

## NURSING AND ESTRANGEMENT.

THE house is changed ; it has become more stirring, more lively. A new centre exists, the cradle, around which everything revolves. The *milky age*, the supreme innocence of the little one, throws its spell over all. Compassion and tenderness enslave the family to him. The father serves the mother, and the mother the child. It is seemingly a world, ordered not like the outer world, but according to the law of love, and of God : in it the strong wait on the weak ; dominion belongs to the least.

The house is more open too, and less lonesome. The infant suffers pain, and cries ; what is to be done ? You call in new aid. The mother nurses him ; but she, so feeble and delicate, cannot suffice for all there is to do. Another servant is needed, who, with the infant ever in her arms, is always in the midst of the family, seeing and hearing. After a while she will edge in her word, and, through the child, become an important character.

Farewell to solitude ! The old servant lived apart from you, and was not considered. You were two ; now you are five.

There is ever a complete change. The mother lives

entirely in that cradle; the world is as nothing to her. This is as it should be, for it is the saving of the babe. So frail is he, he would perish but for his absorption of the mother.

The forgotten father may suffer, but he has to adore her. She is so beautiful and touching, in her state of exhilaration, of fond solicitude, that even he says to himself: "She is scarcely the same woman! I have never known, never understood her, until now!"

When, bending over her son, throbbing with rapture, she catches sight of a celestial smile in his wandering eyes, the light shining from her transfigures all around; no heart can withstand it; all must yield. [Correggio at Dresden, and Solari at the Louvre.]

Love has surpassed love. He thought to incarnate himself, to renew himself, to reduplicate himself; and he has made something mightier than himself. He thought not of making a God. All that is left for him to do is to fall on his knees.

But does this mean that the miracle has set at naught him who, after all, performed it? No; kind Nature takes pity on the first love. At the very moment the woman appears to have no thought for him who loves her, she belongs to him more than ever. The perfect impregnation received from him remains in her, is growing, and will grow. The active love with which she endues her infant has no effect on the passive love—involuntary, and by so much the more invincible—which possesses her. She dreams less of her husband, and loves him less in her thoughts; but more in her blood, more in her transformed life. Even in the midst of this apparent forgetfulness, which seems to separate them,



the metamorphosis which blends them more and more, is being confirmed.

Nor is this all; the flood of life ascends. The emotions, so diverse, of nursing—joy, sadness, at times a mysterious voluptuousness echoing through her lowest depths—cause her (by a sixth sense which cannot be named) to mingle her two loves. Troubled by her babe, she tremblingly turns to its father. When the beautiful fount flows freely and smoothly, when the child lets her go, and drops off, from sheer excess of fullness, she falls back as from a narcotic, in a half dream, in which between her life and theirs there is no distinction. Her personality flows from her; she is all three at once, but most of all in the two she loves.

---

If she should think, in the beatitude of that reverie, it is to compare you two—you whom she has in her heart, and you whom she has in the cradle. "Oh, how he resembles you!" This is her constant exclamation, and she utters it in good faith. It is a sweet sensuality of abnegation for her to say: "I have received him from thee, and he is all thee. I have scarcely anything in him. Thy features, thy soul, even thy movements, thou hast given him. Part of thyself passed from thee in that fiery flash." To which there are not wanting friends, neighbors, and servants to applaud, each after her own fashion observing some new feature. "This one especially!"—"No, no, that one!"

In this joyful carol, the little creature, by his unformed features and a thousand changing shadows, according to the light, or the direction from which they look at him, invites every extravagance. He recalls or

reproduces whatever they desire. Such and such a thought of that happy day, such and such an incident of that night, such and such a physical peculiarity, known to one alone—all are shown in him artlessly. "Ah! I recognise that mark on his face very well—that delightful dimple in his cheek I have seen somewhere else. He frowns; I know why, and I know it isn't his fault." A little cloud was passing at that moment. . . .

Thus the babe, a living history, charms them by telling them their secrets, even the very things they had forgotten. How can they help loving the delightful confidant who knows things they never told, who represents with supreme purity the moment of glowing rapture. A confirmed and a faithful image, he has caught and fixed that lightning flash of the moment which created his future.

So well does he preserve it, so completely is he himself the light of life, the incarnation of joy, that by his side the intoxication begins anew. The sight of him cannot so soften their hearts with impunity. If they did not love, he would suffice to light the flame. His father glows at the remembrance. And she too has blushed. She is agitated—desires and does not desire. But she is the first to recover her reason at length, and (was she ever more charming?) she begs for mercy: "Spare us—have pity on your son!"

---

He is touched. Behold them hanging over the cradle, uniting there their souls, and mingling together their thoughts of the future.

What a glorious day it will be when the eyes of the babe are opened; when his hands are stretched

forth, when he shall try his first step! What feelings, what words will be exchanged between them! What things then to be told! and how much to be listened to! The infant is the occasion, the necessity, of a thousand new relations between them; or, to express it better, he is the communion of two beings in a living form, exacting a sweet intercourse, on which the necessity of nursing still imposes a half divorce.

It is not necessary to remonstrate with the husband. Neither the doctor nor the mother has any need to reason with him. His love for his wife, his love for his child, speak forcibly enough to him. He withdraws himself, but the very least possible, and remains in the chamber.

At first he has his bed apart from them. This is not enough. Even his wife, out of very love for him, makes him go farther away. The child will cry; and if the father is awakened, how shall he arise in the morning in time for business? She begs, and insists, and he struggles a little. "But, my dear, suppose you get sick? We have only you to depend upon!" That is an irresistible argument, for which he has no reply. The poor fellow resigns himself to his fate. Dispossessed of the dear society in which he had hitherto lived, every hour of the whole world of sweet familiarities which made that life enchanting, Adam is driven from Paradise.

---

But in the evening at least, when he returned from work, he once had the happiness of hearing a woman's song, the song of that worshipped heart. In this too the separation is complete. For now the infant is sufficient for her; he is her song, her melody. Bound up,

day and night, in that thought, she needs no other, "My dear, I have no voice. My confinement has taken it from me."

The instrument remains there—a thankless though versatile instrument—the piano, over which she spent so many years. Oh, now how inadequately its dusty keys seem to her to respond to the sublime harmonies in her heart, as of a cathedral organ—profound maternal love!

If the husband should think of it, if he should beg her to recall a few notes, she would undoubtedly try; her amiability never fails her. But what can she do? After so many months, this piano has suffered very much; *the best string is broken.*

---

## II.

### THE BUTTERFLY.

THE Book of Love cannot, should not, contain a second book on Maternal Love. Therefore I must, to my great regret, suppress here what flows from the point of my pen: which is, the charming educational development that the child bestows upon the woman, as well as the woman upon the child. That she may influence him, she goes back to his age. She begins again to lisp; and imitates him, that he may imitate her. What an admirable comedy, in which she evinces such

Indomitable patience, and sometimes almost genius! Without this extraordinary effort, there would be no initiation into human life; we all start from this point, and we should, none of us, become men, but for this patience of the woman, in making herself a child.

We insolently ask why the woman, checked at an early age in her development, has learned no art. It is because she has had to concentrate all the efforts of her best years on a superior art—that of forming the man, of laying the foundation for those mental superstructures, those powerful faculties, of which you are now so proud, and so ungrateful.

This wonderful perseverance in breaking down the barrier between herself and the thing of which she wishes to make a human being, in conversing with a mute, in drawing out signs from him, and at length causing speech and intelligence and feeling to burst forth from him—this is far beyond the powers of the man. He may encourage the comedy, and even take part in it for a moment, perhaps for an hour, but that is a great deal for him. Let her repeat the same thing twenty or thirty times in succession, and he thinks it very agreeable, very charming from her mouth; her pretty tricks to amuse and enliven the little baby sometimes amuse the big baby. But when the comedy is repeated a thousand, a million times, repeated day and night, and for ever, almost always the same—he pretends to listen, to take part in it, but he cannot; he is thinking of something else.

These four years (eight years, if a second, a third child succeed) will establish an increasing divergence, and one that becomes wider and wider, between the

most closely united couple. The woman, absorbed in her office of nurse and educator, renovates herself but little, is even restricted to a narrow circle of ideas. The man, on the contrary, by the progress of the times and of his affairs, by the effect of the solitude in which he is left by his wife, whom the children engross—the man, I say, enlarges the varied circle of his activity, and his relations. He yields more and more to the mighty vortex of life in our age, to its terrible mutability, which takes possession of and destroys the individual, reduces him to dust, plays with him, and throws him to the winds.

In this you have the invariable error which the best households present. The woman (the best woman) is crowded into a very small circle, and the man (the best man) is infinitely dispersed.

The man must needs have a great, a very strong and fixed passion, to prevent such a separation, such an immense divergence, from annihilating the union.

How can this woman, engrossed by her duties, this admirable mother, contend with her competitor, the World, and its variety?—the giddy, glittering World of to-day?

No personality can hold its own against an adversary which opposes to it a thousand different powers at once.

She is beautiful, engaging; she lends a charm to the fireside. But the prodigious mobility of modern life, which carries us in one moment, as it were, from one continent to the other, on wings of fire, gives to man the whole world for a home, and dazzles his eyes with the thousand beauties of humanity and nature by the way, which at least prevent him from thinking.

Even though she be still *spirituelle*, entertaining, skil-

ful in freshening herself, that giant with a thousand arms, the Press, brings every hour to her husband the world's novelties—the novelty of events, of accidents, of facts, which render the novelty of ideas in the most fruitful mind less piquant than they. This brutal training of the mind by material facts blunts and deadens the perceptions.

Let her follow, if she can, that ingenious being, that varying, entertaining kaleidoscope—Fashion; she is still in the most uncertain competition with Change itself—with all the risks of the Unforeseen.

And what resistance can possibly be offered by a delicate personality to violent stimulants, ardent spirits, that barbarism of civilization, which cares only for bold strokes, for factitious paroxysms and outbreaks—those true demons of the mind?

---

We have said that two brutal and cruel powers, which are contending for the world, wage bloody war on love: 1st. The desire, the mania for variety (*La Papillonne*—a very good word of Fourier's), which, long restrained by the monotony of the Middle Ages, has since burst out, to avenge itself to-day, and is the rage, in every form working with all the violence of a reaction. 2d. [We have desired this, welcomed it with enthusiasm, and now it crushes us.] Already wearied, bewildered, palled and disgusted with this hurly-burly, this *Papillonne*, which robs him of all his strength, the man takes cowardly refuge in a different and more fatal enervation, in a dull *Narcotism*, in vague and barren dreams—the fumes of tobacco, the stupefaction of alcohol.

How much right has the woman to reclaim him here! The man who is, I do not say blinded by passion, but who on the contrary forbears, and lives according to reason, will easily understand that the two alternated intoxications, the two opposed deliriums, which bestow balance of wisdom, are found, healthful and vivifying, in the breast of woman, rather than in all this false life. She constitutes the best narcotic, and the best stimulant.

The cerebral paralysis and torpor which wither the morrow for you in advance, are dismal means of forgetfulness, compared to those she would afford you—the paradise of the evening, the sweet repose by her side, with that gift of renovation which would have endowed the dawn with a charm for you.

And as to this infinite diffusion of objects which perplexes you, these many new books which are but old ones, these many railroads stretching to no point, all this—(shall I tell you?)—produces on me the effect of a grand conspiracy to destroy your mind, to overwhelm it with a world of indigestible matter, buried under which it cannot stir. Thus Herculaneum in one day was overwhelmed with five hundred feet of ashes. Thus a meadow of the Loire that I have seen, having in the famous inundation received two hundred cart-loads of stones, was abandoned, and ever since is good for nothing. Save your soul from such a fate; preserve it from this inundation. Guard it with love and wisdom. Reply to the muddy ocean which comes to you and offers you so many things, that all these are as nothing to the treasures which the husband and wife keep watch over for each other: that of the man, a nothing, an infinitesimal, an atom of fire which incites him to love, work, and create—I



will name it in a word : it is The Spark ; and that of the woman, the sweetness of a pure heart in which you rest, the fruitful sea of milk, the eternal youthing. All this under a modest and virginal charm : holy simplicity, divine infancy !

When in the evening you return to the fireside, and she comes to meet you, the little one in her arms, dispel, my friend, dispel the cloud left upon your heart and your eyes by the things which have harassed you during the day. Recover your sense of the reality after that phantasmagoria, that mischievous magic-lantern which has shown you so many shadows. Let this woman with her child, let her charming smile, her joy at seeing you again, her loving kiss, and her mute embrace, purify you, and restore to you the wholesome light of nature. Renew, I beg you, your amiable intercourse, which has been a little disturbed by your business, by maternity, by the nursing which has estranged you. . . . Ah, bear no ill-will towards her ! Is it her fault ? What has she not suffered to give her blood and her milk to this greedy, inexorable child, who has torn her very heart-strings ? You love her, I know ; you behold her bewitching in her blooming beauty, bearing her divine fruit. Oh, the spark for her ! You have found each other the same as ever.

Is it, in truth, the poor little fellow who spoils your tête-à-tête ? He is, at least, an accommodating rival. Tolerate, then, both of them ; or rather, love yourself in all threes. By-and-by he will grow, he will no longer engross his mother. A few years more, and he will escape from her ; then, abandoned by him, she will come to weep in your arms.

## III.

THE YOUNG MOTHER SEPARATED FROM  
HER SON.

I HAVE tears in my heart, and for more than one thing. I have not passed (in history) the Styx, the river of the dead, so many times with impunity.

I am not insensible to my times, and I feel their mortal wounds.

Well, all this, which should deaden me to private sorrows, leaves a place in my heart plainly bleeding for what I have beheld so often, the mother separated suddenly from her child, the mother from whom they take away her boy.

Ah, how can the man do this barbarous thing? Because he foresees, you say. If the child is not put to school, how will he succeed in the trials and examinations required by the State?

Why have examinations? asks the mother. What: do you, Madame, you so intelligent, not understand that it is the only barrier which remains? Without examinations, all goes by favor; it is an absolute reign of the king of kings—I mean the commissary.

---

Eight, ten years have passed away. They have had children, and lost them; all the dearer, then, the one that is left. And this only child must be exiled. They have differences at times on his account. But at length, he growing older, the father insists on it, and he is *torn*

away! Oh, how different the case appears to them! How unequal the sacrifice! He, busy, occupied with his affairs, hardly suffers at all. But with her, it is her life they take. The child had supplied the place of everything for her—art, reading, all that formerly sufficed for her. He goes—an utter blank. She is alone in the deserted house. When the father is absent, and she is free, she weeps in every room. Here he was born, here he played, here he learned to read. At meals, it is much worse. She tries to put a pleasant face on the matter, not to distress her husband, and to pretend she is resigned. She does not look at that vacant place. But—I don't know how it happened—her eyes have fallen on it—she runs out sobbing.

What is left to her? You. You embrace, and console her? But that is not enough for a heart so sad. That heart is out there; it is in that horrid school; it participates in the sudden, the cruel change of situation. The confinement, of a being hitherto so free, the thankless, fretting study, the cold and harsh repression! On whom will all this rebound, if not on the mother, to whom he writes, to whom he relates all? I cut short the story of her sorrows; I have seen her sink into despair.

But this is not enough. The worst is to follow. We become accustomed to everything. After a year she is less unhappy; he has found friends; he plays furiously in the brief moments of recreation. And, when his mother, after a week's impatient waiting, in which she has counted every day, runs, agitated, to embrace him, she finds him cold and heedless, evidently thinking of other things. She has interrupted his play, and made him lose an hour; she speaks, and he hears only the cries

of his companions, who are enjoying themselves without him. Cruel, cruel wound! She feels how little already she is necessary to him; she has only been in his way, he sees her leave with pleasure. She goes forth without weeping, bearing up against her grief. But when she reaches home she is overcome. "My God, what is the matter!" She cannot speak, she can scarcely breathe.

What a blow! She has lost her son, her love of ten years . . . . . and her last love here below! Its like will never return.

She is pure, she is good; she again leans on her husband. No other aid, no consolation but this, occurs to her. Happy moment for him, if he knows how to seize it!

This scarcely ever happens. There are too many changes, changes in him. The man has made terrible strides ahead during those years of half divorce, while she was thinking only of her children. He has passed through a thousand trials. He has arrived at an unpoetical age which they call *positive* (forty years), as a general thing already cold and barren. Is he even himself? I wish I could believe it. But even though he be a man apart, exceptional and peculiar, whose life has not eaten into his very heart, it has at least attacked the flower of the heart, that exquisite and refined sensibility, which would enable him to feel the happiness of so sweet a return.

And she too is changed. How much for the better! I appeal to Vandyck. Pleasing at twenty, she is admirable at twenty-eight. And a curious thing it is: she has changed her class, so to speak. The first beauty of youth scarcely ever attains aristocratic distinction. The rose was a little *bourgeoise*; but this lily is royal

The refinement, the immaculate smoothness, the irreproachable purity of her complexion, proves that no base passion has defiled the sanctuary. Her visible innocence renders her still more touching in her melancholy. She suffers, and has done no wrong. "And what is the matter with her?" is asked. "Is it her husband who makes her unhappy?" "No; but her son is at college. That is the cause of her illness." They smile; and this grief, so little understood, which seems childish to them, is still doubted. That some other grief is concealed there, everybody is ready to believe; and all desire to console her.

This is not easy. For she has a horror of the world, a distaste for society, and idle amusements. When her husband drags her into company, she returns sadder than ever. "Ah, my dear, why alter our habits? Sad or cheerful, I am better at home."

How right and sensible she is! . . . And are you wise yourself? What is it that her heart needs? Love; and nothing else. Is love extinguished in yourself? No, but cooled, dissipated. She desires just the opposite of dissipation in love: she desires concentration.

The hearth has been disturbed, and the embers, that formerly burned, are now scattered. But they must be brought together. Let them but touch each other, and the spark will revive.

Would you love, love much—that is, be happy? Then take by the hand the charming woman who comes and reclines upon you. Take her, press her to you, live much with her, and do not leave her. So, many living fibres will mingle together, will recover their force, will restore your unity.

I ought to premise to you, that she is at this moment richer in beauty and love than ever. Pain and sorrow have made her a new woman, have created in her exquisite graces of sensibility, profound joys inconceivable to you, and pleasures yet unknown.

Divine treasure! Fool indeed is he who will invoke the world to share his affections, when he himself seeks but a single heart upon which to bestow himself.

---

The world! the vast world!—As she utters these words the young wife is subdued, and I too become gloomy. The infinite, the unknown, is before us. What shall we find in it? A thousand presentiments take possession of us.

This book has been flowing smoothly on, and I could not check its course. It has made too convenient use of the blissful hypothesis of a solitary life, of a little world of harmony. But how can one be isolated from society?

That world will not permit it. If you do not go to it, it will come to you; it will growl at your door, like the waves of Ocean. And no bars can keep it out.

Who art thou, that knockest so loudly? Art thou my Country? my People? Art thou the Great Love to whom all should yield, to whom heroes offer even more than their lives, their very hearts? Ah! if thou art, then let the door be widely opened! If not, let it be shut, let the walls fall! For we are thine, we belong to thee, body and property, life and soul. And she too, woman as she is (or rather because she is a woman), will not disgrace us; on the contrary, tender towards individuals, she has no less than us the love of country.

But, O World, thou art not that world of grandeur and of light. Thou art confusion and chaos.

"It is no matter! I will enter, and you can do nothing; I am your fate. You shut the door against me. But you breathe me; I am in the air. You cannot escape me. Without, within, everywhere, do you find me.

"Yes, I am, undoubtedly, confusion and peril. And therein am I a wholesome trial; there is in me a duty to confront and to perform. My true name is: *The Battle of Life*."



#### IV.

#### OF THE WORLD—HAS THE HUSBAND DEGENERATED?

THIS house is no longer the little house we had the happiness to describe. It has become larger in the very nature of things. Children, relations, business interests, have in every respect amplified it. Our couple, linked together, and alone with their hearts, have been compelled to admit this dangerous third party, whom they hoped to exclude—the stranger, the unknown, the World. It has also, undoubtedly, become necessary for them to live in some great centre of business, where the activity of the husband may find full play. And last, and worst of

all, our husband and wife have, perhaps, become rich by that activity, or by the mere progress of time, gifts of the dead, inheritances, etc.

Observe, that in France one thing is wanting which is the true foundation of English life, and which in every sense keeps the family together. What is this? The lock and key. Neither of them exists in this country. In England solitude is the rule (a voluntary, cherished solitude). Here it is the exception, a peculiarity, and a very rare one. Unintroduced and unrecommended, any man may introduce himself, by his rights as a man.

The inscription over every English door—an unnecessary inscription—is “I do not know you.” Over a French door you read: “Have the kindness to enter.”

From this handsome confidence, which does honor to the nation, there results one inconvenience: namely, that those who are not admitted, imagining that they are the only exceptions, become your enemies. Those who are admitted with reserve, with a natural caution, are still more dangerous, in that they have a better opportunity of injuring you, by getting into the place. They bring in the Trojan horse.

The most dangerous and determined enemies are generally relations, who often, without the least congeniality of ideas and sentiments, aspire, nevertheless, to your intimacy. The woman who is closely bound to her husband, and reserves her confidence for him, is sure to have all the women of the family against her. Mother, sisters, cousins, all become her foes, and wage a petty warfare against her. The friends of her childhood, who have retained a foothold in the house, entertain much ill-will towards her, for they cannot pardon her steadfastness in



the right path. If they do not quarrel with her, it is because they wish to watch this singular house, this exceptional character; they still hope that, sooner or later, she will flag, and thenceforward will become so much the more dependent on them, in proportion to her previous propriety; and having an overwhelming fear of rumor and of scandal, she will become a slave to the friends who have detected her secret.

But even though they find her still innocent, young in heart (her child having engrossed her), quite inexperienced in spite of her twenty-eight years, still they do not despair of seeing her reach that moment of weakness. For this they must have tact; but above all, the patience, the wily patience of the Indian hunter. The envious are not wanting in this. Years are as nothing to them, provided they win a little in the end.

It begins in harmless matters. The one whom she trusts, and consults about dress, may also, at times, touch on other subjects. On some occasion such a one may, as if jesting, and in sheer thoughtlessness, throw out a trifling remark about the husband, and playfully alluding to some slight fault, shake the woman's faith, that had hitherto, blind at least by habit, believed him to be almost perfect.

---

He seems to confirm this. It cannot be denied that in middle life (thirty-eight years, we will suppose) the man, engaged in business, excited in his profession, bound down to his particular career, cannot but have notably declined.

He has husbanded his resources, concentrated his mind; he is stronger, but no longer genial. The beauty

he possessed at twenty, at twenty-five, when his mind and his heart took an interest in everything, and enjoyed everything—that young budding greatness, which was the chief attraction to his wife—has he preserved this! I doubt it. Why was he loved? Because in him she saw the infinite. But it is precisely a special strength which alone has given him success in his profession—his art, or his science; it is exactly this which has narrowed him, and robbed him of the infinite, that imposing illusion of love.

This is the admission we owe to woman: It is too true; the husband has declined.

It is too true. He was a man when she first loved him; ten, twelve years later, he is an eminent lawyer, an excellent physician, a great architect—that is fine. But to the woman he was finer in being a man; that is to say, in being everything, in having the range of thought in all things, hoping all things, and soaring above all things.

Now, let the woman (who is happiness here below), let her, I say, judge us fairly. What would have become of that man if he had soared for ever, if he had never descended to seize on the realities of life?

Let her judge. But a great mind has taken exception to this privilege; he says, "Woman is the destroyer of justice." She is all love, it is true; and love, it seems, is favor and proffered grace. Still, who will maintain that there is not also in love appreciative generosity, tenderness, profound pity, for the effort of the will, for the nobility of labor, from which comes well-earned success? And what woman is insensible to glory? Even to relative glory, which is the same in trade as in art. It is as plainly visible in the humblest circle as in the

in, rising sphere of nationality and humanity. Woman is keenly alive to it. She takes a strong interest in it. She is impressed by it. She will admit no doubt of the glory of her husband. And if he is a blacksmith, never dare to say in her presence that he is not the best blacksmith in the world.

Then, Madame, you wish for glory, for success; you desire that this man shall make his mark in works, which alone prove strength. Only you do not always take into consideration the very difficult conditions, the determined efforts, often violent, extreme, and I may say desperate, by which success is purchased.

Of these conditions, the hardest for the man is that of being branded by the effort in that member which he must employ the most, and so of being no longer symmetrical. He who hammers iron, were he the very genius of his art, were he even a god, must infallibly have his right shoulder too high. What can you do for this? Deprive him of his art at an early period. And whoever forges in any other line shall also bear the mark of his trade—some mental or physical deformity. The gravest deformity results from the unemployed faculties becoming atrophied. If the artist does not take heed, by ever strengthening one faculty, which shall become colossal, and leaving the others undeveloped, he will become a monster—a sublime monster, it is true.

---

The antique man remained strong and beautiful, and the progress of years was to him but a progress in beauty. Ulysses, at fifty, returns from Troy, returns after a long and terrible voyage, in which he has undergone every

hardship; and he is the same Ulysses—so entirely the same, that he alone can bend the bow which the young braggarts can hardly lift. His Penelope recognises him by his strength, by the majesty of his beauty, which suffering has but increased. How is this? He has preserved himself by his energetic use of all the gifts that belong to him. He remains the symmetrical man who went to the siege of Troy.

Now take what modern man you will, of the best blood, and the best endowed, grand in genius and in will; at twenty he finds before him a great and terrible test, the gauntlet of the arts and sciences, which he must run before he can arrive at distinction. The object of life is changed. Ulysses was born to act; he acts, and remains beautiful. The other is born to create; his speciality (the machine by which he creates) marks him; the work is beautiful, but the man is in danger of becoming deformed.

Woman, have pity on him then!

Give us credit for this great effort; and if we lose,—since the human race gains by it,—look at the work, not so much at the workman.

You give your beauty liberally to your children; we give ours to our work, our intellectual child; but almost always too liberally, alas! and without any reservation.

---

Now, what would come of it if we should remain as we were, beautiful in our aptitude for all things, of a brilliant facility—if we should stand at the luminous threshold of science without penetrating its shadows? We should be, not the antique man, in the complete

symmetry of Ulysses, but the agreeable society-man, who knows everything; one of those held in such admiration and request in the time of Louis XIV., and who was known as "*l'honnête homme*." He was a gentle man, who turned his hand to nothing, but who plumed himself on a fine, delicate appreciation of everything. We would in our day call him "the connoisseur." Such are the heroes of Molière, Philinthe, and, if you please, Clitandre.

He is a monarch in the salon, a nice judge of many things, the admiration of the ladies, accepted and appealed to by them. He knows everything *in general*. He pleases them because he resembles them. They always know and do (when they do anything) *in general*. They remain mere *amateurs*, having no power to understand works of conscience, and the master-pieces of herculean talent, like a Ruysdaël, for example,—*l'Estacade aux eaux rousses*—that prodigy of the Louvre.

We do right in not requiring from woman such terrible works as these, which involve a martyrdom to art. Her glory lies in living works, far above all art. In her is the spark by which they are inspired.

As to man, it is a different matter. The age will not hold him guiltless if he remain Philinthe or Clitandre. The modern man, that all-powerful male, must incessantly generate.

But if child-birth is at the cost of agony to the woman; if she must suffer nine months, and then scream for twenty or thirty hours—the grander generations of the man often require nine, aye twenty years. And what stifled cries, what suppressed groans! The *hah!* of the

carpenter, his heave as he lifts his axe to drive it well home, we have uttered all our days.

---

Women love energy and grand results, the principle and its goal; but they are ignorant of the long road which leads to that goal, appreciating neither the time nor the continuity of effort necessary to success. Believing that everything is gained by strokes of genius, by happy hits, they are sensible of no achievement but that of improvisation. The fortunate lawyer who carries home to them a triumph every evening, the sparkling journalist who dazzles them with his display of fireworks—these are the beloved men. But even improvisation, in great matters, requires time, and a great deal of it. That of Michael Angelo, so rapid, took six or seven years of solitary application to paint one church.

Observe that a too frequent effect of great performances, of grand efforts, is the loss of language. He who acts or creates, talks little. "Deeds, not words," is his motto. The brilliant gifts he may have had when he was yet on the surface of things, are lost to him when he enters into the thinking, exacting intercourse of art, where only results are called for. The smallest of small-talkers may take precedence of, and keep silent, the greatest of inventors. I have sometimes beheld the strange spectacle of an insignificant character, in a circle of laughing ladies, lording it over a poor man of genius, one of the three or four who will give their names to this century, who shall reform its very art, who shall compel it to study.

---

## Has the Husband Degenerated? 207

It is still worse in business, properly so called. For a woman there must be no business. She herself wishes to be the only, the essential business of the man, and every other is odious to her. She scarcely ever gives full credit to the mind, the talent, the superior faculties so often displayed in the management of varied interests. She desires to know nothing of all this. At the slightest word uttered about his plans, his efforts, what he does and what he hopes for his family, she yawns or turns away her head. In short, she desires to be rich, but to hear nothing about the way of becoming so.

What shall the husband do? He often works solely on her account. Some, moderate, and not extravagant in their desires, can live, like so many others, in that free and simple style so much liked in France. It is his marriage, his enlarged household, his continually-arriving children, which have attached him to labor—a thankless labor, of which he cannot even speak to her. She goes and comes, idle and disdainful, while he wears himself away, in reality alone, and keeping to himself the thorns of life.

---

How is it, if you please, that the novels which, it is pretended, represent our manners, never touch upon all this? Why are the men we meet with in them—husbands, lovers, whatever they may be—always idlers with incomes? Why do messieurs and mesdames, the authors, usually choose their heroes from the vagabond class (help me to the popular expression, strong and graphic), drones, and *people for fattening*? Why is this? Because the weakness they retain, for all their democratic speeches, is for the dainty world, for the gentry

I regret to see so much genius wasted in this century on this dreary style of novel, made to probe our wounds, to aggravate them. The novel has taught us to weep for ourselves; it has extinguished fortitude. It has made universal evils of the wretchedness, of the moral deformity, which exists only in certain classes. Out of thirty-six millions of Frenchmen, thirty-five are utterly ignorant of all that is depicted by these grand artists.

Nevertheless, this morbid literature takes no hold on healthy minds. It brings disease only to those already diseased. It is not very dangerous to the little household for which we are concerned. The young wife who has not been forced into premature ripeness in her early youth, pierced and poisoned by the mystic worm; tainted and spoiled by religious equivocation, is not ripe for the novel. First, a healthy love, loyal and strong, and then maternal love—two powerful purifiers—have guarded her against contagion. She would not understand Balzac; or if she did, would reject him with disgust. His book on *Marriage*, which he himself calls a skeleton, would seem to her a corpse.

She will not be won over by vileness. The friends who sound her, and would shake her virtue, will not fail to lend her secretly something from Madame Sand. What does she find there? That the lover is no better than the husband. The husband is often infamous in those books, but the lover always contemptible. What do I say?—he is base, loathsome! Raymond shutting his door against poor Indiana, who has no refuge but in death, is certainly as powerful a warning as could be written against adultery.



No single book, however, should be taken separately from the painful mission of this great writer. You must peruse all. The husband illustrates it to his wife, and gives her the leading idea of it. It is, after all, a historical monument of the weakness of the times, a passionate impeachment of the want of character in our middle classes. A woman, born for all that is great, and therefore justly exacting, has sought everywhere for the strong, and has not found them. She has uttered aloud what every one thinks. That is, that *man has declined* (husbands, lovers, it matters not which), that such men will not do for the women.

If you have no intention of responding to this appeal, of renewing your energy, you certainly have reason to fear these books. They are your positive condemnation. But the men who daily prove their prowess, who create new life, or risk their own, have no fear of novels. They know very well that, even if their wives should spend the day in perusing the portraits of husbands which Madame Sand draws so well, they could not recognise *them* in the pictures, which are those of strangers. I write this in the town of the most beautiful women in France, whom their husbands leave every night to go fishing. And, what is more, six months in every year they go in a body to Newfoundland, where numbers of them perish. Well, in this place there are no bastards, no adulteries, no amours. If there is ever any scandal about a woman (and this in a population of eighteen thousand), it is in the upper classes, or sometimes among the *bourgeoisie*.

Admirably abstemious, they are yet rich in liberal development of beauty—with large hands, fit for

the employments of men. Many of them are in business. In the night they wash their linen; in the day they run among the rocks in a fearless nudity which would be a blessing to a painter. They appear, however, to be ignorant that a *gentleman* is a man. They will bathe him, in case of necessity, as if he were a nurseling. They could fight wonderfully if an enemy should come, as did their mothers once, when they took English prisoners with their own hands.

There is not a novel in this place. The poetry of the ocean is enough and to spare; it furnishes only too many tragedies. But I declare to you, all the novels in the world might come here. Husbands might allow their wives to have them with impunity. For two considerations protect them: One is the idea of death, the idea of the danger which their husbands are braving, far away, brought ever freshly to their minds by the sight of so many widows in the streets; that keeps their hearts lofty. The other is the vigor, the superiority of the men, daily facing more dangers than a soldier ever meets. From this comes profound security. The men know that their brave partners will not be deceived, that they know well who the true men are.

This original place, with full, fresh healthy breezes, and heroic inspirations, is that where the English and the Vendéans fought—Granville—rightly called, since '93, *Victory*.

---

## V.

## THE SPIDER AND THE FLY.

WHEN I see the singular ardor with which women wage war on each other, the exquisite enjoyment that intimate friends feel in losing a friend, I may well fear for the household I am following in this book. One thing reassures me. It is this: that in despite of the accidents of position which may have relaxed the bond, they communicate everything, trust everything to one another—every act and every thought. The table and bed in common afford natural opportunities, favorable hours, even to the busiest man. He tells her of his business, his ideas, he tells her everything; and she appreciates the trouble he takes to make her understand even those matters which seem out of her sphere.

This effort to have her always participate in his life, is of infinite influence on her. In it she feels his enduring love, steadfast through so many pre-occupations. In it she feels his loving consideration for the wife and the mother. She is elevated by it, honored in her own eyes. So strong and so earnest a tenderness renders her own no less profound, and independent of the changes (all external) of humor and caprice. It renders her scrupulous, mindful to tell everything too. She takes in true earnest the promise she made (end of Book iii.) to confide to him all her sentiments, and all the emotions of her heart. Sometimes it costs her very much to keep her word. Still young, morally a virgin, it gives her a little pain to acknowledge this fugitive thought, that dream, that illu-

sion of nature, which sometimes comes to the wisest. But then she has promised! A just and right instinct tells her that her best security is to live in open light, under her husband's eyes. She has a confused idea of the snares which surround her. She does not affect to know everything. Hitherto separated from the world (by her child), the surest plan for her is not to take a step without relying on the experience of him who lives amid the warring of affairs and interests. Women (almost all) ruin themselves by pride. They refuse to acknowledge that the husband, compelled to mingle in so many intricate matters, living in open battle, is much more positive than they. He needs must be so in his affairs, when there is a daily chance of his being ruined, and bringing starvation upon his dear ones, if he errs from the right course one line, or even so much as a hair.

Women are very subtle, you say. This is true. But that penetration which they possess in matters of sentiment, those who have not mingled with the world do not have at all in matters of real life. They really live from *hand to mouth*. In the moments of the greatest danger they leave much to chance. And if they consult any one, it is generally the very person of whom they should most beware.

---

You often see the best wives ensnared, even through their husbands. They are vain for *him*, ambitious for him, and through this they can be worked upon. If he is powerful and influential, his wife, willing or not, must have a court. She takes pleasure in this glitter, for it is a reflection from her husband. She becomes an object for intriguers. She has ladies come to her house (not once

only, but ten times), ladies of good position, esteemed, often pious, active in good works, whom she has seen in charitable meetings, who bring with them, and introduce, a young man; he may be interesting, already capable of assisting her husband, devoted to his ideas, exactly in his line. He has lived among solitary studies. He is wanting in the polish of the world. But then, he is so gentle and so docile! If he is only received, and advised and directed a little, he will soon become accomplished.

When the affair is once begun and in good trim, an astonishing concert is established. No one speaks of anything but the young man. It seems as if every part had been assigned. Some cousin, admitted in the morning, mentions him accidentally; she has seen him, and thinks he is delightful. And in the evening, another female friend will say jestingly: "I am in love with him." The *femme-de-chambre*, even bolder yet, soon breaks the ice, and ventures, while she is dressing her mistress's hair, to say he is dying for love. Yesterday you had to bribe Lisette; she made you pay for her tongue. But to-day there is no need of it. She knows very well that if her lady is once embarked in an adventure, has once given her a handle, and allowed herself to be surprised with a secret, she will become mistress of her mistress, can have full sway in the house, and reign and ransack without control.

How much faster they will all go to work, if her husband, instead of patronizing, has himself need of a patron; if he is, for instance, some little functionary waiting for promotion, some manufacturer in poor circumstances, who can make no progress without being backed by a capitalist. In this case, the mode of corruption is inso-

lent and daring. They hesitate at nothing, push bravely on, at the risk of rousing the indignation of the young wife. The good friend, the female confidant, already a woman of experience, to whom she has artlessly told some heart-sorrow, will tell her that after all she is not surprised that she should grow weary, being so poorly married; that her husband is a pitiable object, a person of dispiriting incapacity; that he will keep her vegetating for ever. She says so much of this, that the self-respect of the little wife, her good heart, the affection she still preserves in the bottom of it, are sensibly wounded. She cries out, she flies into a passion. And the awkward woman must change her tactics: at any rate, we must aid this poor man who, after all, works very hard. He should have some one to depend on, who would take him to his heart, who would be sure to succeed, who has power and credit; he need only raise him from the earth; he could then trust to his own wings; a little help at first will do so much.

There is nothing older than the way of making two people love each other, who would never have thought of it. But it always succeeds. It is only necessary to tell each that the other is in love. The patron and the lady, thus prepared, and brought together by a favorable opportunity, which is never wanting, will both act as is desired; and the young wife rarely fails to justify what had been said of her, by some trifling piece of coquetry, which she thinks harmless, or at least allowable, since it is for her husband's interest.

But they know that she loves her husband; they know she will not go much farther, that it would not be safe to make any overtures to her. It would be at the risk

spoiling all, of having her escape them. Doing is a surer way than talking. Boldness, a half-violence, will carry the thing successfully, and force her into it.

---

You will say this cannot be. You believe that these odious acts are seldom seen but in the lowest classes. You are completely deceived. They are very common affairs. But the matrons are a great deal more discreet about it than the young girls. They keep the affair to themselves; they swallow their grief and their tears.

Sometimes the thing is revealed, in one way or another, long after it happened. A number of facts of this nature have come to my knowledge, and from true sources. I have no desire to give the shameful details of them. The spider has always circumvented the fly, and dragged her into his web.

There is one essential point to be noticed. It is this: that in these affairs the weak creature had not the least intention of being false, that in the act her will counted for nothing, or almost nothing; but that, on the contrary, the very act itself (a compulsory one, almost entirely) corrupted her will.

Another grave point is, that the female friend, who betrayed the wife, herself knew the circumstances of life, of temperament, of health, of menstrual epochs, etc., which enabled her fully to understand what she might dare, and to take the situations, the moments in which the woman is always most feeble, and most easily agitated by any emotions whatever—by surprise, or certainly by fear.

And the third point is, that the more unexpected and improbable the thing is, the more hatefully absurd, the

easier it becomes. Indignation is very powerful, you say. Yes, but surprise is more powerful: it is blasting, paralysing. The will, not warned, not expecting anything to happen, does not act at all, and fatality effects everything, not allowing the dismayed personality to assert itself until afterwards, and then perhaps only to draw from it a moment of physical consent, which is, after all, not a consent.

---

She weeps—she wishes to tell all, and yet does nothing towards it. Her friend shows her the danger of such a terrible exposure—and that, too, for something which cannot be helped. What would be her husband's rage, his transports of fury! Would he believe she had been forced, or consented? He would demand satisfaction from this man, who, much more skilful, more accustomed to arms than he, would kill him for satisfaction. "My dear, I beg you, for your husband's sake, not to say anything about it. Who knows? It may result in his death; at least he will certainly die from grief. Your children will be ruined, your life blasted. . . . This man has such power to harm you! He is very wicked when he hates or is enraged. But it cannot be denied that he is also very zealous in the cause of those whom he loves. He wishes to atone for his offence, to propitiate you. . . . He will do everything for your family, for the future of your children."

And, in fact, some one will come and tell the young creature the next day that he is driven to despair because he has been too happy; that he will kill himself if she does not forgive him. For it is her heart that he wishes to win. He has already been at work for her husband



He burns to be of service to her; and never was there seen so much good will. "My dear child, what is done can't be helped. Alas! we women are all obliged to suffer, and to hide many things. I have had my share too! . . . . But then, in this vale of tears we must always be resigned—must always humble ourselves, my child, and forgive. We must always have the right feelings about these things, and not be implacable towards our enemies. And, really, he is in a most terrible state! He seems wild—you will have pity on him?"

This eloquence leads to a meeting, this time a voluntary one. The interests of the family have begun the work of corruption. Then comes a violent scene, an admirably performed play of sorrow and despair. Large promises, eternal devotion to the husband. And all so pathetic that even the female friend weeps! Sensibility wins the day. The young wife is not inexorable. How far will her forgiveness go?

Still matters drag. Nothing comes of these grand promises. She is dying with regret and remorse. They make her I know not what excuses. At length, every pretext exhausted, the friend profits by her impatience. "Why, my dear, I would write; yes, if I were in your place, I would call upon him to perform his promises; I would make him blush; I would say that after all he has done, and all you have pardoned—after so many new favors, it is horrible for him to forget." This speech, or something like it, written by the imprudent woman from the other's dictation, betrays her for ever. Both *friends*—the man and the woman—hold her henceforth for their own, and are sure of her. They speak to

her in another tone. They begged before, now they command. She has a master. At any day, at any hour, here or there, he bids her come, and she obeys. The fear she has of scandal, and a sort of magnetism, which I cannot understand, like that which allures the bird towards the serpent, draw her on weeping. They find her more beautiful thus than ever. They laugh at her. As for the promises, they scarcely remember them.

When he has had enough of her, she is at least free? Not at all. Her friend has the papers, and she lures her on with new hopes, which are improbable and absurd. No matter, she *must* go on; she must sell herself again and again; must submit to another patron, who, she is told, will do better, but who still does nothing. What a frightful servitude, which lasts as long as she is young and beautiful, which sinks her lower and lower, casts her down, and thoroughly depraves her! Ah! would that she had had courage rather to risk everything, to go to her husband, and throw herself into his arms, and to tell him all! Whatever might have been the rage of the first few moments, she would surely have found more compassion in him!

But this life of shame has shattered the little nerve and resolution she had. She bows down to it, and is less capable every day of freeing herself. If at times her female tyrant, who hardly treats her with decency, should goad her by some bitter, ironical speech, and again arouse her, so that she resists for a moment and says, "I will reveal the whole!" she will answer, "Why, my dear, everybody will laugh at you; not one will believe you. And even should they believe you, they would laugh none the less." "There is the law, ma-

dame." "Oh, that's a mistake, my child; juries in these cases require proofs clearer than sunlight. More than one would envy the guilty man. Such is the sentiment in France. People always start with the idea that she who resists the most consents in her heart, at least for a moment. What can you do? They have always thought in this way, and therefore they have always laughed."

This is only too true. The very men who will read this, they who see the manners of our time, and the readiness of so many women to seek renewed dishonor, will, I think, say: "There's no need of such an outcry about the matter." They do not, or will not, understand what is still true, though it is more concealed. It is this: that numbers of women take the first step out of the path of duty in spite of themselves, led on unknown to themselves, skilfully drawn farther than they are aware of, and at last surprised and compelled. I mean that there is a half-violence, strong enough to master the weakness which has gone too far, and which finding itself captured, loses its self-possession, and yields. Thenceforth she believes she has gone too far to recede, and will submit every day.

"She has consented," you will say. It can be proved that she has made advances by some slight levity, coquetry, an imprudent glance. It would be very harsh to judge her by these facts. Were they a serious encouragement, a pledge to dishonor? You know very well, they always want to please. But they are wrong in believing that man is generous, that he of whom they expect some worthy favor, something for the family, will feel repaid by a glance. Is it then nothing to have

the happiness of obliging a woman, of having her feel for you that affectionate sentiment which the most innocent grant to gratitude?

If it be her misfortune to become *enceinte*, so much the more harshly will they say that she consented. This is an old error, the fallacy of which is now known. Nature has nothing to do with consent. It is the occasion more than anything else which decides it. The complete opposition of the will, a passionate sorrow or despair—none of these are of any consequence.

---

I am angry at Cervantes, who has, in other respects, such admirable good sense. He has flattered a brutal prejudice, and courted a vulgar laugh, in the trial imposed by his King Sancho on the girl who complained to him. The strength she employed to defend a purse of gold before the court, and in open day, and that too with no fear of anything, does not by any means prove that she would have been able, when surprised and terrified in the night, to defend her honor as well.

An old German law (of Swabia), which went to the other extreme, nevertheless understood well that in this case surprise is everything, that the crime consists entirely in the boldness of the attack, in the strong hand fastened on a timid being, mastered in advance by excess of emotion. It ordains the death of him who has laid his hand upon a virgin, and rumbled her hair (*disca-pillata*).

---

Those who think that they effectually establish the fact that woman can defend herself, speak of her as a cold, lifeless thing, with no emotion, like a piece of marble

on a block of wood. But every physiologist, every physician, and every one who understands this poor nervous being, who vibrates and quivers at a breath, whom nature desires to be feeble, and whom she monthly disarms by suffering—such a one will tell you that nature also desires that she should be always protected, that she should walk holy and respected, that every man should take up her cause as his own, giving serious ear to her complaints. It is for us to defend her, since she is unable to do it herself.

We should leave to the scholastics that absurd opinion which draws a precise line, puts a well-defined severance, an abyss, between *consenting* and *not consenting*. In a matter so blended of the influences of the body and the soul, so blended of liberty and compulsion, there are infinite shades, and I know not how many intermediate and mixed states, in which, not consenting, she yet yields.

I have passed my whole life in upholding the rights of the mind against the nauseating materialism of my age. I must, however, make use here of some plain words, words of good sense (not materialistic). The body, remember, acts also; it is concerned in the motive, and the two actions cross each other, each prevailing in its turn, each succeeding to the other with a terrible rapidity and confusion.

Our voluntary powers must not be spoken of as you would speak of a bar of iron, or a bolt, which you draw, and simply open or shut. This will by no means do. They are very much more complex. It would be juster to compare these powers to a thing infinitely susceptible of rise and fall, like a therm-

meter divisible into I know not how many degrees. In order to measure her true morality and the degree of pain caused her by the act, we must discover what was her degree of will, what also was the degree of constraint which is almost always blended with it. Without this careful appreciation, the best judge may err, and be too mild or too severe. One whom he would spare, has desired and ventured; another whom he would crush, has not consented; not even with a thirtieth part of her will.

“And the twenty-nine remaining parts which have decided the act, how do you reckon them?” Put down twenty of them for the surprise, the terror at feeling herself under a strong hand (and cruel too, if need be). Then, if her resistance continue, add, say eight or nine degrees, for what his fierce impatience hardly spares her, the rude shock, the sharp pain which paralyses her. And last, her emotion (for the poor woman is not made of stone). If to this sudden suspended agony, there succeed a sensation not painful, it is to her like a reprieve to the criminal on the scaffold. This is the wretched thirtieth part of will which is not will, of pretended consent. And is the culprit less guilty? No, he is more so; this very fact, far from extenuating his guilt, adds horror to it. He has defiled the soul.

---

A wise magistrate has said that in all causes in which women are concerned, and even in many others, the tribunals have need of the permanent assistance of a medical jury for the elucidation of the real degree of will and of necessity concerned. It is not enough to call in some chance expert for the proof of material circum-

stance. They should always be present to clear up the capital and obscure question—that is, the degree of will.

All the aids of physiological science are needed for this. And when the doctor shall have told all the physical, material, fatal facts, let the judge conscientiously commence his work—the blame, the correction and redressing of the soul, the medication of patience and of amelioration.

In the Middle Ages, when all science was theological, the magistrate took care to have by his side the *clergyman judge*, that is the *savant*, whose duty it was to enlighten his conscience. In our day, I have no doubt, our tribunals have a continual increasing desire to keep the light of science before them, which at least will explain half of every case. I allude to the physician, the physiologist, who, without pretending to too great an influence, will nevertheless afford great aid, and often give the clue to the judge, by means of which he can himself penetrate into the shadows of the will.



## VI.

### TEMPTATION.

IF I have spoken of these tragic matters, to which the little household, which is the only object of this book, is a stranger, it is solely to warn imprudent flies of the manœuvres of the spider. It is to remind those who

neglect their wives, and almost forget them, and are then astonished when they hear of their sad fall, that they themselves are the cause of it, and are very justly punished by it.

Those, on the contrary, who are but little removed from each other, who remain together, and daily mingle their thoughts, have no cause to fear these plots. They see them beforehand, they talk of them, and laugh at them in scorn or in pity.

All honor to the woman, for preserving herself free and pure amid this universal withering, when her relations, her friends in girlhood, almost every one of them, undergo a bondage to shame. They affect at first to consider her strange and ridiculous. All this makes but little impression on her. And then, seeing her remain unshaken, unassailable, they are compelled to be resigned. The public voice, the suffrage of unconcerned and disinterested persons, assigns to her her true moral rank. In her simple dignity, still young, without knowing or desiring it, she assumes authority. She is consulted, and those whom she receives are esteemed. She is trusty and discreet, while she nevertheless plainly warns all that she will have no secret which she cannot tell her husband.

---

Can she ignore the advantage of such a position, and not be proud on account of it? This is a difficult thing, but it is but little perceived by any one. She presents only the modest gravity of a young matron, honored by her husband, queen of his heart as well as of his house, who rules in her own sphere, and is often consulted in her husband's sphere, being conversant with



his affairs, and able sometimes to advise usefully. Even in general ideas and conversation, the woman of thirty, with a clear and unsullied mind, which has not been drawn down to low thoughts, often shines with a light unpossessed by the man of forty, given to his speciality, and a little enfeebled.

She has reached the summit of her strength. You feel it in a certain grand and serene expression which her beauty has taken on. She blooms and thrives with a charming plenitude. Never was her skin whiter than now, and it has again become delicately rose-tinted. Always abstemious, she is yet not indifferent to the table. She should walk more; but she has so much to do in the house, that she finds it difficult to leave it; and her sedentary life gives her a little too much blood. She blushes easily, often without cause. The flood rises suddenly to her head, and then her beautiful eyes glitter more than they should.

She lives and enjoys life, but with a moderation which would weary others. Her only sensuality consists in going alone at times into her garden to gather herself some fruit—one, then two, then several. Why should she do it stealthily, when she is mistress of all, and can rob only herself?

She gives herself holidays; she becomes a sluggard. Her sleep, sometimes heavy, is not, however, always peaceful; she has sudden heats, when she blushes deeply, and tosses about. Her husband, awakened in the morning, and watching her, is not without a certain uneasiness. What is it? She is but dreaming; or rather her young blood, so abundant and generous, dreams for her. The malicious fairy of dreams makes

sport of even the wisest; she causes precisely those to submit to her follies in the night who have the least to do with such things in the day. But our wife is so scrupulous, that almost before she is awakened she makes an effort to tell everything to him; and confessed, absolved, embraced, she is happy and blooming, unmindful now of herself.

The physical life of woman is often awakened very late, at a period which it would seem should bring more calm, when her health is strengthened, and when she is free from the maladies of youth, and the first trials of maternity. All in regular harmony, all going on with perfect order, her position improved and easier, her child grown up, and established at school, her motherly heart calm, the good wife having accepted all that is in her husband, knowing his strength and his weakness, and ruling him a little, her whole existence glides on with the imperceptible motion of a railway train, at moderate speed. . . . But what a trifle would suffice to throw it off the track!

---

Our tradeswomen, the most intelligent in France, who live in public as in a glass house, and are consequently very easily observed, give rise to this remark: that there are many among them, otherwise discreet in conduct, who have a weakness for their head clerk. You say at first that this weakness is at the husband's expense, but this is not always true. If you penetrated deeper, if you knew the interior of this house perfectly, you would often find that he is none the less loved, that the predilections of the lady are for the one whom he himself loves and esteems, whom he believes, not with-

out reason, to be the most devoted to him. I have sometimes seen this idyl in a shop. An innocent idyl it seems to be, but notwithstanding dangerous; for the ground is slippery. The young man, delighted at thus being adopted and so well liked by both, may be truly loyal at first; he loves them both, and scarcely discriminates in his affection. But still things work on their way, and the handsome eyes of his mistress trouble him more and more, and make his life very unhappy. All three presently reach the end of the affair—the idyl is turned into a tragedy, and makes its denouement: separation, downfall, perhaps suicide.

I wish you to notice only one thing in this, which is remarkable, but which is also very true: that a good wife, with a true and tender heart, who has the misfortune to give way a little, does so only on the side towards which her husband also leans; I mean towards the one whom her husband prefers, whom he appropriates to himself, and holds subordinate; of whom in short he makes another self. On the contrary, far from loving the men who are superior to her husband, the wife is ill-disposed towards them; she is envious of the greater renown they have, hates and fights against it, and is not at all ensnared by it. I have seen this, not ten, but a hundred times, in our *bourgeoise* classes.

The worst women, on the contrary, those who are unfaithful, who sin not through weakness, but by express desire, do not fail to search after and to attract a man whose real or apparent superiority will humiliate the husband, will render him ridiculous, will overwhelm him with shame and irony. Which one do they love in heart? Neither of them. Their fall is not an affair of

love, but of pure vanity; and it is from pride that they dishonor themselves. The absence of the heart explains everything; so, too, they seldom reform. Where the heart is wanting, nothing will supply its place.

---

To return to the young wife, so perfectly balanced in moral harmony with, and bound to her husband: if any misfortune should happen to her, it can only be a surprise of the heart, of which he himself will be a little guilty. Their position, their virtues, the magnanimity of that excellent man, may lead in the most honorable way to an accident, not dangerous, but afflicting to her, which shall remind her that she is a wife, and make her poor heart bleed.

A nephew of the husband, suddenly orphaned, has fallen to them at the age of ten; they are eager for him to come. He arrives (from Pau or Bayonne) a graceful child, with no timidity, full of pretty and roguish ways. Madame, then very young, not over twenty, receives him like a mother, weeps with him for his own, even more than he does, and covers him with caresses. He is sent to school, to return every year in the vacation, more and more lively, agreeable, charming, and bold, with plenty of confidence in himself. He becomes twelve, fifteen, and is still received very lovingly, like an elder brother of her own child. They do not grudge her her innocent caresses any more than they do those she bestows on the little one. Only the effect is different. One day she is romping with him in her husband's presence, and, as you may imagine, caught by surprise, and captured; he must be paid with a kiss, and she lets him take it. But it is not the only one: at the

second, she loses her self-possession; returns it, with more than he gives; she lies a moment in his arms without strength, breathless. He turns very red, then very pale. He laughingly leads back the trembling dove. Her husband laughs too; but she not at all; she has a fever all day.

From this year, it may be believed, she begins to be a little afraid, and becomes more prudent. He, on his part, is developed with all the vivacity of Southern grace, is a good talker, a charming and witty storyteller, perhaps a braggart; but he is always believed. The damage done the Northern woman is great, and the contrast strong which he presents to the earnest, busy man, whose manners are undemonstrative, but who concentrates his fire for action and great results.

The agreeable arrival of the young man is a holiday in the house, and works a sudden change in everything. There is more sunlight, it seems, and more noise and laughter (not much heard where true happiness is). As for her, she laughs and she is sad. This contrast strikes even herself, and makes her uneasy. She is not very well, and the gentlemen go out together, while she remains; she wishes to collect her thoughts, and commune with herself.

There she is in that little garden—in that same garden where ten years before, on the holy day she became *enceinte*, she walked in the dawn, not less agitated, though so pure. There she is in the presence of the same flowers which were moved to pity for her, and swore to her that she was innocent. “But what would they say to me to-day? I have done no wrong, and I have wished none. If I had, I should have told my

husband. Still I am troubled ; I do not feel well. Yet I have nothing to tell him." "Very much, madame." "Why, who was it that spoke? There is no one here but this rose and I. How brilliant it is, and so red (at least so it looks to me)—red with fire. Does it speak by its color, and what does it mean?"



## VII.

### A ROSE FOR A COUNSELLOR.

Do not pluck the rose, Madame, or it will become for ever mute. Removed from Nature's bosom, it would but wither on yours, after having intoxicated and agitated you with its perfume. Bend over it and listen ; this is what it tells you :

"You go and come at will ; you are endowed with the power of motion. I remain always on my stalk. You admire me in my calmness, in my rosy royalty. I am such because I always remain faithful to my nature.

"I am not a plaything, fit only to be stuck in a woman's hair. I am an earnest creature, a powerful and living energy, a work and a worker at the same time, set here to solve a mystery. My time is short ; I must hasten to accomplish a great end, the perpetuation of a divine race, the immortality of the rose. And hence it is, Madame, that I am one of God's Roses.

"I have my stalk, and I cling fast to it. Spare me

the honor of dying upon your bosom. Let me remain pure and fruitful; and be so, likewise, yourself."

"Ah! you have spoken well," replies the woman; "how I should like to resemble you, to be also one of God's roses.

"But, dear Rose, do you really think I ought to make a confession? And what shall I confess? It is all a cloud, a mist with me, in which I can scarce distinguish anything. And if I accuse myself, it will break his heart."

"But you have promised to tell him everything."

"Oh, Rose, you understand the love of flowers, but not that of women! The very moment that I confess this thing, this love for another, it will assume a sudden strength in my heart, become more ardent than before. To reveal it, is but to increase it."

"Then you are indeed unfortunate. You guard your secret, brood over and caress it as you would your child. You tremble lest it may be discovered, and be dragged into the full light of day. And you are right, Madame, for nothing in nature is more delicate. From the time that a secret love is acknowledged, it is compromised. It may still burn on, but it burns towards total extinguishment. Such profanation brings it to shame. If you had but to tell it to a female friend, to a kind and indulgent father, you would not hesitate a moment. You would delight to talk of this love, and nourish it, and your tears would be an additional sin. But you must tell it to the victim, to him who is to suffer from it, and share with him this painful secret. How his heart will bleed! but yours will bleed also, and will put an end to this love for another. Your

dream will be stript of its wings, and you will come down again to the real, to the infinite sorrow in which his bleeding heart is plunged. You are kind and affectionate—love will return to you through pity.”

\* \* \* \* \*

She heeds this counsel. She summons all her strength and courage. At the breakfast-table, from which the young man is absent, she will tell all. She takes her seat, weak and haggard, feeling like one condemned to death. But her heart beats too loudly, her tongue is tied. At last, with a superhuman effort, she asks her husband if this life of idleness is good for his nephew. His studies are finished. Is it not time to put him at something, to place him in a position which will prepare and open for him a career?—The husband regards her with surprise:

“Why, my dear, he has but just come. We cannot send him away yet. I noticed, indeed, that you were very cool to him. Have you taken a dislike to him?”

“Oh, no!”

“Do you love him, then?”

“Ah! If it should have come to that . . . .”

To have lifted a mountain would have cost her less effort. She falls back powerless; she is almost fainting. Both are extremely pale. But he, though heart-broken, is strong even in death, is grateful to her for her heroic loyalty. With her, one danger alone is to be feared, that she will die of her anguish and of her virtue.

He convulsively clasps her hand, and they separate in silence. But, like a fire from which the ashes have



been suddenly removed, her passion breaks forth, her agitation, her internal distraction cannot be concealed.

Love is so powerful a thing that, though you catch but a flash of it, by its reflection alone, it sets everything on fire. The coldest heart is warmed thereby; the boundless pride, the sudden joy, the violent delight of its discovery, creates in the least susceptible young men an immediate blazing forth of passion! How this passion may have been expressed, favored as it was, under the guise of a natural and, so to speak, filial affection, is not known. But the poor wife, almost beside herself, and too weak to resist these struggles, as evening and bed-time draw near, throws herself into her husband's arms, choking with sobs.

He kisses her, tries in vain to quiet and encourage her. It is only after a long time, after a deluge of tears, that, keeping him still close to her, and not letting him go, she succeeds in saying :

“Defend me, have mercy on me, sustain me. I feel that I am sinking. My will is so feeble that it slips away from me hour by hour, and soon it will desert me entirely. No; for it drags me with it; I have only strength left to drown myself. I did wrong to be so confident of myself until now; I am punished for it. I am weaker than our little one was in his cradle. I entreat you to look upon me as a child, to treat me as one, for I am nothing more. You have been too kind to me heretofore—be more severe, be my master. Punish me. If my body is humbled and mortified, my soul will be cured. I must hold you in dread, be a little afraid of you. Let my will perish from this moment! I will have nothing more to do with it; I deliver it up

to you. You are my veritable will, my better self. But do not leave me, that I may ask you about everything—whether I may desire it, and whether it be right for me to desire it.”

This profound humiliation of a person who was innocent and irreproachable, fills him who loved her with pain. Alas! to see this queen of purity fallen so low! He conceals his true impressions, and makes an effort to smile: “My dear,” he says, “it is not enough for you to ask me to act thus; I must also find the will to do it. Do you not feel that there is nothing about your beloved person that I do not hold as sacred as my mother’s grave? Where shall I find the resolution to treat you with such harshness?”

“But if it does me good,” she answers, “if it cures me? Fear, said Solomon, is the beginning of wisdom. I feel a need of fear, of humiliation. I should love you the more for it. Madam —, whom you know as a very proud and self-confident woman, said to me the other day: ‘she who has once felt the weight of her husband’s hand, is so much the more attached to him for the severity of his affection, recollecting and fearing a repetition of it.’”

“No,” he answers, “we shall not yet go back to the barbarity of past ages. Great Heaven! have I married a soul and a body, to make of them a thing, a nonentity? I slander them to think of it. But, my love, whatever your self-abasement may be, remember that my love’s dearest wish, my heart’s greatest desire, was to reach your soul, to enter wholly into its inner temple. What will become of me if I listen to you, if I break your will, if I deface you by fear? I shall have

lost for ever my most cherished hope. What truth or fidelity can I expect from a servile person, who has once trembled before me, and who, brought thus low, can never regain her former position—would not, perhaps, if she could? The soul is but too ready to abandon itself, to take delight in its shame, to seek and to feel in it a sensuality of love.

“And if I exterminate your will, what will you have left to love me with? No, I wish you to become more and more an independent being, a free intelligence, opposed to me if need be.

“I have always wished you to be thus, but not strongly enough. I have not cultivated and nourished your heart with sufficient constancy. Hence comes this fatal accident. Whose fault is it? It is the fault of the labor, the business, the outside interests and the cares with which I have been occupied, for the accumulation of your fortune, and that of our children. Improvident man that I was: for the family's sake I forgot the family! And for an uncertain good I have jeopardized that which heaven placed in my hands—this, my incomparable treasure! Thanks for this cruel blow; I am warned against myself. Without it, I had been a man no longer. Now I return to my former self, I feel and recognise myself through affliction. You will find me again what I once was. We shall be inseparable for the future. And you must needs love me, for I shall be great and noble again.

“As for this boy, even were he not already related to me, he should become so. He, upon whom your eye has once dwelt, who has occupied for a moment your cherished thoughts, is a chosen being who should ever after

experience the benefits of this great good fortune. I will adopt him. I will put him forward to the utmost in his career. Though far distant, he shall be ever present to me, and he shall always find in me a helping friend. I shall be pleased if, in writing to me, he speaks often of you. May so noble a souvenir keep his heart worthy and pure, and always in the straight path."

---

Our invalid was not one of those who do not wish to get well. She did not let her husband lull himself into security with this imprudent and magnanimous confidence; she allowed no delays, but prayed and insisted upon the sending away of the young man. An occasion presenting itself, the nephew departed the next day. She felt that in these matters no procrastination, no middle course, is possible. A partial separation, permitting him to return frequently, would have been more dangerous than a permanent stay. More timid than Rousseau's Julie, she would have feared even the boat of Saint Preux and the rocks of Meillerie. So she desired and exacted of him a complete separation, which should cut off everything, even at the risk of breaking her own heart.

But she was surprised that he who she thought must suffer the most, resigned himself to the separation with great composure. The attractions of the unknown, of travelling, of a new life, of a rapid and brilliant career, with a friendly providence to help him along, all combined to form a powerful distraction to the sorrows of parting. The lively imagination of the South is often found joined to another gift with which it would seem at first irreconcilable—a lively appreciation of the actual, and of self-interest.

However virtuous and courageous she may have been, she was vexed to see herself so calmly obeyed. Her husband saw that she suffered intensely. Any other person would have felt exultant. But he, who loved her so, shared her grief. Nothing could be gained by the separation, if this sorrowing love was to last, and perhaps increase. Of what use was it to outwardly preserve her, if the fatal shaft was still to rankle in her bosom?

She would have perished in her mute sorrow, not daring to confess the affliction of her love that remained to her, nor the undefined regret, which a weak nature associates with its grand sacrifices. If her husband had yielded to the ordinary temptation of jealous men, and removed her from society, shut her up in solitude, he would have fulfilled her dearest wish. If he had put her in a tower, built on the summit of a rock, or in the malarious castle of the Maremma, where Dante's Pia passes out of life, she would have thanked him for it. That was what she needed, to keep her ideal ever before her eyes. Solitary, and a prisoner, she could uninterruptedly have enjoyed the happiness of tears.

He did just the opposite. He wisely judged that if the illusion remained, it was because the loved object, so promptly sent away, having become a permanent vision, still retained all his former charms. Far from granting her the indulgence of solitary dreams, he took his patient out into the living, moving world, subject to the teachings of reality, and convinced that her false and fantastic creation could not survive such contact.

---

One of the most frequent causes of a lover's illusions

and exaggerations, is the belief that the beloved object is a marvel, is *unique* by some quality, which is found to be commonplace when one learns a little more of the world.

A young man sees in Paris a beautiful girl, with delicate and regular features. He is enamored. He marries her, and afterwards is anxious to see the birth-place of his wife, the city of Arles. There, he finds at every turn this woman whom he thought unique. The marvel is to be seen any day, in the streets. He sees a hundred, a thousand girls as pretty as she. It is the beauty of an entire people, the Arlesian beauty that he has fallen in love with. And his ardor is at once cooled.

In like manner, an uninformed Spanish woman, who has never been out of her own country, and for the first time beholds, with his tutor, a young Englishman, with that blooming complexion which is found only at the North, is completely bewildered. Shut her up in a convent, and she would die. The opposite course is the one to pursue. You must take her to Germany, to our Normandy, or to England, the entire zone, in fact, of blonde beauty, of millions of women and children, and young men even, just as white and red as the one whom she thought unique. When she has seen this ruddiness on numberless faces, destitute of all charm, stupid even, she will conclude that the quality, common to a whole race, does not suffice to make an angel.

The attraction of Southerners, for us of the North, is more common still. Such a man at Lille, at Rouen, at Strasbourg seems irresistible. Is it through his own merit? Not at all; it is only because he has, in his look or his speech, the sun of Provence, the grace of the

Bernese, the piquancy of the Gascon. The most ordinary men from these favored districts, if transplanted to the North, produce an astonishing illusion. At an official dinner, where many of the guests found themselves together for the first time, I was seated opposite a gentleman from the South of France, whose charming eyes seemed fairly to sparkle; however much you tried, you could hardly support a glance from them. In those eyes were countless romances, in the style of Ariosto—everything that was brilliant and sparkling; at times they seemed to contain the divine fire of genius. I at length asked his name of my neighbor. It was perfectly unknown; he was a deputy from the central departments, who never said a word in the Chamber, but was extremely loquacious elsewhere. So that, in this human firework, the race was everything, the man nothing.

---

It is then to the South that our prudent husband takes his ailing young wife. He does not allow resignation and sorrow to close in upon her. He insists upon a change of air, and of habits. The beautiful horizons and landscapes of southern France elevate and fortify the heart. Rousseau has admirably told how, at a time when he was sinking, the mere sight, the austere and grandiose sight, of the Pont du Gard lifted him up. How much greater the influence of the sublime spectacle of the Pyrenees! Their untrodden glaciers, their immaculate snows, purify the eyes and the soul.

But while seeing nature, your delicate and intelligent patient also sees and understands man. She finds everywhere, in this part of the country, the young man who has parted from her. At first she is pained by this. They

all have the same vivacity as he, the same grace, the same fluent and brilliant speech. In fact, she sees here every quality which she imagined he alone possessed: the same quickness, that charming clearness of glance, at times sparkling, again more profound, retreating into a semi-tragical sombreness, which has its effect, but about which, however, there is naught of seriousness.

That young man talked excellently, and was very amusing. So is every one here, and several have an astonishing fecundity in conversation. A mere clerk, to induce you to buy his wine, will exercise more diplomacy than the Talleyrands. If you hesitate, his eloquence increases till it resembles a whirlwind, a *maßstrom*. It is like a Pyrenean torrent, sweeping its banks along with it. It even reaches the pathetic, the sublime, carries everything before it. But how he will laugh when you leave!

A loquacious, and yet a charming race! They lie without lying; it is their nature. Do not blame their fictions. They have a poet's license. It is planted so deeply in their nature, in their blood, that on every occasion it comes up to them unconsciously, in spite of themselves. I have seen some who for days together would pour forth a torrent of assertions which could not deceive any one, false as facts, but true as ideas, which, if they did not exist in the real world, had a brilliant existence in the domain of creative fancy.

When we see this mirage for the first time, we are dazzled and amazed. This it was that the Northern woman felt in seeing it in but one person; but when she finds it in a crowd, in a whole people, she grows calm, becomes herself again, and smiles.



The god falls from his pedestal and becomes man, like other men. He is subordinated, classified, returned to his genus and species. If the celestial being has disappeared, there remains an agreeable young fellow instead, a little frivolous and not much to be depended upon, but not without his merits.

---

VIII.

THE MEDICATION OF THE HEART.

ARE the adultery of the woman and the adultery of the man equally guilty? Yes, as an infidelity, a violation of vows. No, in a thousand other respects.

The treachery of the woman carries with it fearful consequences—that of the man does not. The woman does not simply betray her husband; she yields up his honor and his life; She makes him gossiped about, ridiculed, pointed at, hissed; she puts him in peril of death, of either killing a man or remaining a butt; it is almost as if she let an assassin into the house by night.

He will suffer a moral assassination all the rest of his life, never knowing whether her child is his child, obliged to rear and provide for a doubtful progeny, or to amuse the public by a trial, which, whether he gains or loses, makes his name a byword and a jest.

It is folly to say that the woman has no more responsibility than the man. He, by his activity and strength, supports the family; but she is its heart. She alone

## 242      The Medication of the Heart.

knows its mysteries. She alone holds the secret of domestic happiness, the sole assurance for the future. She alone can attest a legitimate inheritance. A wife's falsehood may falsify history for a thousand years.

What is the bosom of woman, if not our living temple, our sanctuary, our shrine where burns the light of God for ever, where we each day are recreated? If she deliver this up to the enemy, if she permit this fire, which is her husband's life, to be stolen, it is more dreadful than to plunge a knife into his heart.

No punishment could be severe enough, if she knew what she had done.

---

But she is nearly always very far from even dreaming of it. Premeditated infidelity, prompted by hate and malice, is a thing of infinitely rare occurrence. The first false step, at least, is nearly always accidental, the result of a negative weakness, less an act than an inability to act, to resist.

Warm, *full-blooded* woman are dazzled and bewildered, and at certain periods have an actual vertigo. Those of a lymphatic temperament have an extreme placidity of will; they are wont to yield; they know that it becomes them, and hence they never resist. It costs them too much of an effort to refuse.

Those who are not forgiven often suffer the bitterness of remorse. I myself have seen two striking examples.

A very beautiful woman, rich and happy, arrived at her fortieth year without a shadow of reproach, having a dear husband and grown up children, one morning, as if tired of a monotonous happiness, yielded to a man whom she did not love. Her inexperience in evil-doing

caused her to be discovered. Her chagrin that she had fallen at that age, her shame in the presence of her children, weighed her down, and she died four months afterwards.

A young woman of twenty-five, elegant, high-spirited, and full of life, with a face of noble gravity, expressive of a pure mind, had, to her misfortune, a beautiful and impassioned voice, which was continually in requisition at *soirées* and in the *salons* of Paris. A duet turned her head; she succumbed to the transports of her art, not to passion. Her heart still belonged to her husband, who was young and pleasing, and certainly adored her. Overwhelmed with her misfortune, she went to him without delay, told him all, and threatened to kill herself at once if he did not find means by which to make her expiate her crime. But he, crushed by the blow, never found strength to punish her. In this contest with herself she began to sing. She had lost her wits.

I was young at the time, but the memory of that occurrence is ever present to me. I saw her in a lunatic asylum—a pit of madness and misery, to which her physicians had consigned her. Her husband came to see her every day, and swore to her, with the tears pouring down his cheeks, that she was forgiven, that she was thenceforth pure and innocent. But she understood nothing of all that. Her madness was only cured by exterminating it: the treatment she received annihilated it. It may be said that she came out of the asylum a living corpse, and it was not long before she died in reality.

It is a pity that this same terrible word, adultery, is

applied to two very different things, to the perverse infidelity of her who mocks her husband, who really wishes to disgrace him, and the heedless self-ruin of an imprudent woman who does not even know that she falls until after she is fallen.

A wife awaits her husband's return from a journey with lively emotion, a strong physical impatience. His supper is ready to receive him, but he is not able to come. He sends a zealous friend to tell the cause of his detention, and to reassure his wife. Through a violent storm the friend arrives, wet to the skin. She is touched with sympathy, has his clothes dried, gives him supper, and orders a bed to be made ready for him. She prepares for him a heating wine, which only her husband drank, and of whose dangerous powers she is ignorant. In short, they both lose their reason for the time being.—The friend, truly in despair, seeks out the husband at the earliest opportunity, confesses all, and offers to submit to any punishment. What is he to do? "The real culprit," says the husband, "is the wine. And I also am guilty. There are times when no woman should be kept waiting."

A storm like this, which brings together two persons with strong passions—evening amusements, romping country games with relations, with boys who are considered children, are but too frequent occasions. A thoughtless girl, by her wild hoydenness, provokes a bold act. She had not dreamed of it, nor desired it, but she comes home weeping.

But the case that most frequently induces infidelity is ennui, the excessive ennui of woman's solitude. The man's life is busier and more animating.

What a sad thing it is to see in our country towns women, married but two years, yet already forsaker; to see them go, at vespers, to yawn with five or six old cronies.

How often, too, in travelling, as I entered a German village, have I seen at a balcony, or in a little glass conservatory, surrounded by flowers and birds, a sweet womanly face looking through the window at the passers-by! How languishing she seemed! "She is not loved enough," I thought. "Where is her husband? Spending his days between smoke and beer, while his house contains for him the most charming of God's gifts."

The most faithless are often those who had the greatest need of love, who loved powerfully, strongly, and would have been the most faithful. French women, for the most part, are not at all contented with the cold conjugal observances which suffice for the women of the North. The latter, being gentle and resigned, exact but little; and if marriage is for them only an exterior relation, a simple living together, they sigh, but make no complaint. To our women you must give everything or nothing. The French woman is either the worst or the best of her sex. Union with her must be either null or complete.

It is very wrongly believed, and often she herself yields to the belief, that she has constant need of amusements and distractions. In reality, it is quite the opposite. They do not know themselves. Those who fly from pleasure to pleasure, shake off their thoughts in the pursuit; but they own that they soon weary of it. What they really need is to be *very much loved* and *very much occupied*.

## 246      The Medication of the Heart.

Even the woman of business, but partially occupied, though always kept behind the counter, has not that excitement of outside affairs which continually draws her husband away from the shop. I see now, in imagination, a young and pretty saleswoman, in the back part of a dark, damp booth, in a dingy little street of the city of Lyons. Her husband loves her, but he devotes his days to business and his evenings to his café. She languishes in this living tomb. How can you expect her not to listen to the friend, or the customer, who comes and goes every hour, amuses and interests her? If the husband really loves her, he should take pity on her, liberate her from her loneliness.

Even without leaving the city, it will often be found sufficient to raise her from the bottom to the top of the house, from darkness into light. The little woman, exposed to the dangers of the counter, and fickle by the necessity of her situation, rather than from any willingness of her own, can work very well in a room on the fourth floor, whence she may see the verdure on the hill sides of Fouvrières, or better still, a glimpse of the Alps, which shall elevate and purify her heart.

"Is that all?" No, that is but a small part yet. The great point is to love her, to interest yourself in her, not to turn your back when you see her weary, to sympathize with all her sufferings. Not only go to her frequently, but do not leave her. She will feel grateful for this, and disclose her thoughts to you, at last; she will go so far as to say, "I am dying with sadness." That means, "I want a love."

But do not be offended at that; it is only a love, not a lover that she wants. Love applies to so many things.

It is perhaps the love of a child, or the love of an idea, of a great work, of an entirely new, busy, exacting life in a strange country.

No half-way manœuvre will remedy this; do not imagine that a slight and transient diversion, a trip to the theatre, or an excursion into the country, will suffice for her state of mind. No, she must have some outlet for affection, or a great change in life.

---

Whatever may happen, even if she should fall, do not abandon the wife of your youth. If she has fallen, she has so much the more need of you. If she is humble and repenting, you must treat her as an invalid, wait upon her, and hide her from the world. If bad influences have perverted her, you must, without losing a moment, take her away from them, and place her amid better surroundings; act with energy and moderation, correct her gently.

She is still yours, whatever she may have done. The share that she has in your name, the profound and complete blending of your physical existences, renders all separation illusory. She who has once been fruitful, once impregnated, will bear her husband with her everywhere. This has been amply proven. How long does the first impregnation last? Ten years? Twenty? a life-time? It is not known; but one thing is certain, and that is, that the widow often has by her second husband children resembling her first.

She has surrendered herself *entirely* to marriage; what would she have beside it?

Man has such an advantage over woman, both by nature and the laws, that it goes against his magnanimity

## 248      The Medication of the Heart.

ever to ask for divorce. If she demands it, she who loses everything by it, it is to be regarded as an astounding, senseless act, except in cases of cruelty and maltreatment, from which she must be delivered at all costs.

You cannot abandon her. For how dangerous will it be for her, when the lover who receives her, experiences the disgust of finding your reflection everywhere in her person, transformed through you ? In discovering in her, your voice, your words, your gestures, and traces even still more profound !

She belongs to you to that degree that even should the lover impregnate her, it will probably be your child, one marked with your features, that she will give him. He will have the punishment of seeing that he can have nothing real or profound from her, and that in the capital point, the generating union, he is unable to render her faithless.

What would become of the unfortunate woman if forsaken, and driven from her home, by you ? she would not even have the friendly shelter of his roof who desired of her but the pleasure of a moment ! Do not abandon a woman whom you have loved, who was and who is yours, to the chances of such an experiment. Rarely does she risk it herself ; if she be not too badly treated, it is seldom that she leaves her home, the home of her habitual associations, and where perhaps she still has a bond of love. This is singular, but not the less true ; more than one capricious woman cares more for her husband than for the object of her passing fancy ; and, if she had to elect between them, would prefer him who knew her as a maiden, whom she has in her blood, and whose life is her life.



"Do not strike a woman, not even with a flower though she has committed a hundred faults."

Our hearts would have prompted this sentiment, if India had not said it before us. Strike a woman! Heavens! a woman, our queen of love, and a queen so submissive that she gives the man illimitable power every night, the power to render her *enceinte*! It is almost the power of life and death.

To humiliate and break down a weak, gentle creature, by a servile punishment. Oh, base cowardice!

The women of the Middle Ages (and even now those of certain races) underwent, and endured patiently, conjugal discipline. With the nervous women of our day, this would be a dangerous attempt. Some would die at the least blow. Even when taken in her guilt, the woman should be spared. In but one case, where the despair of a great remorse threatens her life or her reason, if she offers herself up to punishment, begs and implores it, a slight bodily suffering may be granted her to lessen that of the soul.

---

The best remedy is in travel. Leave your business; cut the bonds that confine you to it, and take her away with you for a season. Do not utter those vile words, too often used in these days: "No noise about it . . . I will keep her here in spite of herself. I will inflict upon her and her lover the daily torture of my partnership in their joys. She shall be for me, henceforth, like a chattel, the passive instrument of my pleasure. And what matters the rest, after all?"

No, you must go to the root of the matter; suffer yourself, that she may be purified. Once taken from her

associations, and brought into a new society, where a different language is spoken, intimate only with you, she will be quite a different person. With him who works for her support, who never reminds her of her misfortune, never makes her life bitter to her, treats her as kindly and gently as on the day after their marriage, she literally renews herself, and retains no more of her past than a vague souvenir, as of an unpleasant dream. In different circumstances, surrounded by a thousand new necessities, you will both be renewed. In Europe you have had two children, here you will have a dozen. At home, your pretty wife, with her self-willed and ardent spirit, would have ruined you. Here, on the contrary, she is the making of you. Be exemplary, courageous, and industrious; she will assist in making your fortune. She will love you with the old love made new, for having regenerated her; and in your old age you can both return to your native country.

---

## IX.

## MEDICATION OF THE BODY.

A CELEBRATED surgeon, who had much experience of women, makes this remark: that, though often a little cold in their first youth, they have, on the contrary, at the middle of life and at the beginning of its wane, a real need of being loved. Often about their thirty-fifth

year, ten years before the normal cessation, the blood circulates with less regularity, stops at times, and becomes obstructed. From this come maladies of all sorts, impassioned dreams, languors, devouring flames, the desire of love, regrets.

Her husband deserts her, deceives her in his habits, and runs after thoughtless girls, who make fun of him, and are in reality so little worthy of him. His true province—the profound heart, the intelligent mind, the poetic soul of his suffering wife—he utterly forgets. What a prize he might have possessed! How powerful and delightful! The fruit of all fruits, the peach, is improved by the bite of the wasp, and woman, in like manner, by the sting of pain.

The man who, having eyes, sees with them, appreciates this period, when the face wears its most touching beauty, when the creature of Love, under the hand of Nature preparing for herself an age of suffering, already more humble in that, cares least for show and most for happiness. She especially, who has lived a life of duty and virtue, who has walked side by side with love and with discretion, is very touching at that hour when, imagining it taking to flight, she sighing, says: “What, gone already!”

---

If you except the malady of northern countries, consumption, an effect of climate, there are but two great maladies in Europe, both having their origin in our passions, in our thoughts, our wills.

*The man wishes to be strong*, and he takes the wrong course, carrying invigoration to excess. He eats and drinks a great deal too much. All his maladies proceed from the digestive organs.

*The woman wishes to be loved.* She suffers in the organ of love and maternity. All her ailments, directly or indirectly, arise from the matrix.

This Proteus takes a thousand shapes. Its actions are remote. If you retrace, observantly and patiently, the life of the invalid, you will find at last that the affection of the chest, or the stomach, or what not, that you thought entirely foreign to any such cause, was prepared ten, fifteen years before, by some deep sorrow of the heart.

There is nothing low or vulgar in woman. Everything is poetic. Generally she is sick from love, man from indigestion.

Nothing is more serious than a reply she often makes, and at which men laugh. "What causes your head-ache? your tooth-ache? your colic?" "Not being loved enough."

---

Having given the key to this mystery, and being now extricated from the mire of my 8th chapter (on Adultery and Divorce), I can follow the inclinations of my heart and return to our ideal, to the woman who has not fallen, to her who, reclining upon a loving husband, and concealing nothing from him, has skimmed over the wave without foundering in its depths. We have seen how she could arouse herself from her dream, and see the idol of her illusions vanish. But does no trace of it remain? Yes, for the most virtuous of them does not lose this illusion without a pang, does not confess to herself without pain that she has loved without being loved in return. The love of her husband is not doubted. She has felt the strength and the tenderness

of his heart; yet even here she suffers also, feeling her former position gone, in having acknowledged to him that she was not the heavenly being, the angel of God, that he had believed her to be—finally obliged to confess to herself that without him she would have fallen, that she needed his protection. She is divided between these two questions: "Have I not sinned at least in thought? Or (O shame!) do I not regret having been preserved from sin?"

Thus, between two loves, between doubts and scruples, in the ebb and flow of a heart but partially cured, she gives way, loses her strength, languishes and grows pale. After the plethora and the storm comes a great exhaustion. The disease may be already prognosed.

---

In addition to our own diseases, we of these times have all to cope with an ancient and mysterious curse which we get from our ancestors. This latter, which never appears to us in our strength, lies waiting within us for the day of our weakness, and on that day pounces upon us, conquers us—breaking forth often in the most astounding forms, to our great terror and mortification.

My book is not an idyl. If the frivolous young man, the fastidious or disdainful young lady, chance to read it, they must have courage. For it will be ever sincere, and will not recoil from Nature. Besides, this is not an accessory. It is the heart of the subject, the strong proof of love.

The love which boys bear for a white and rosy Iris of fifteen can hardly be called love; it is a surface desire, a slight arousing of the senses. But he of whom it can be said, "His love is as powerful as death," loves in

quite a different manner. You need have no scruple in setting him, not before Death, but, what is harder to bear, in the presence of Disease.

What disease? That which is often hereditary and fatal, of which this, your poor mortified wife is innocent. The purest, the most virtuous, has none the less a germ in her blood which sooner or later will betray her. This soft flower of love, this dazzling blonde (beautiful as the *Néréide* of Rubens at the Louvre, if you will), may soon detect the reappearance of the scrofula that she had in her childhood. That other beauty, with the large, lustrous eyes, the dark complexion, whose love seems to burn its way into your heart—alas! the very shaft of love that she directs at you in her heart-rending smile, is the twinge of the fierce cancer which is devouring her bosom.

The story goes that the brilliant Spaniard, Raymond Lulli, once pursued with his suit a lady who loved him but yielded him nothing. In the audacity of his desire, he followed her into a church. There, indignant, and emboldened by the darkness (Spanish churches are very ill-lighted), she turned round and displayed to him a bosom which was the prey of disease. What think you the lover did? He ran away from the place; and the knight turned doctor, preacher, schoolman.

He did not love her. Had he really loved her, how such a discovery would have bound him to her! What a strong tie, what an opportunity for devotion, I had almost said what a tender attraction, this would have proved! To the honor of our age be it said, that an eminent thinker, in a similar case, doubled his former love. He surrounded the innocent victim with atten-

tions proportioned to her misfortune. Delicate precautions were taken to veil her from the gaze of others, and almost from her own. How he must have loved! This single instance, among many, where the two combined against fate and nature, will be envied by all those whose hearts are worthy to contain such a sentiment as theirs. And may not this indeed be the true temple that Love, the conqueror of death, has wished to consecrate to himself here below?

---

Suffering is the very life of woman. She can suffer better than man; she is much more resigned to it. But the intolerable part of it to her is, that disease, that cruel revelation of our nature, displays her in numberless low, sad, ungracious aspects. Every woman has had a period, a moment of divinity, when she was thought to be, when she almost thought herself, freed from this earth. The remembrance of that time follows her, and ennoble her in her own eyes. Even the drama of childbirth, which keeps her in bed for a short time, leaves her very poetic. Disease, alas! has none of these effects. It drags on, heavy and dull, displaying wantonly what nature most strives to conceal. A triple disgust—of the disease itself, of its phases, and of its remedies!

When the truth can be concealed, the invalid suffers in silence. But it would seem that disease has the perversity to show itself by unpleasant appearances, treacherous efflorescences which bring it into relief. There are certain pimples that come and go upon the face, or an eruption on the scalp, enough to drive one to despair. I have seen this last affliction attack a young woman,

of resplendent beauty and freshness, so that she would gladly have died of it.

From that moment all witnesses are in the way. The *femme-de-chambre* is sent off, dismissed. Questioned by her husband, the patient weeps: "I am ashamed, my love. That girl will go and blab it about."—"Do not cry," he answers; "I alone will take care of you, and no one shall know of it." "But if I should displease you? For it is on your account that I suffer most."

A serious and terrible cause of the maladies of a woman who has passed her days of youthfulness, is in doubting her own influence. This doubt will cease on the day when, contrary to her expectations, her husband, in the height of ambition and success, holding perhaps an important station, forgets and sacrifices all, waits upon and attends to her with pleasure, proving to her that she is always his cherished and only thought.

"My love, it is really a pity to see you turned aside from your career to this extent—leaving great matters to occupy your mind with my misery. I am ashamed of myself; I pray you, leave me." She says this, but she smiles, and is truly happy. Her mind is very tranquil now.

---

Disease is discord, and health is harmony. Your first care should be to establish around the invalid an exterior harmony. You will never succeed in this if every-day neighbors, friends and relations, bring their advice to bear against yours, or call in their own physicians, thwart you at the very turning point of the disease, and even inspire the vacillating mind of the invalid herself with doubts. These doubts are in themselves a grave malady,



which will lengthen and aggravate the other. There are no means of curing them. Solitude and quiet are what are required.

The organization is about to relax, and in the majority of maladies this is the true commencement of a cure. Nearly always it is an exaggerated idea, or a passion, which has overstrained the nervous system, upset the general equilibrium. Removed from the causes which have produced this evil, weaker and more depressed than before, she enters of her own free will, with body and soul, into a sort of retrospective meditation. She takes a clearer view of things, gets rid of her exaggeration. She blames herself, wishes to make herself better, and to live in perfect accord with the general harmony and the will of God. She comprehends that she is not innocent of her illness. She accepts it with resignation; she no longer accuses Nature, who never lets us off otherwise. One who does not complain of sickness, and is not impatient to be well, is in reality very nearly cured.

But nothing so inspires the invalid with patience as to be tended by the hand of him she loves, to feel herself enveloped by the being who is all the world to her. In this long tête-à-tête, which brings back to her the sweet solitude of the honeymoon, she is resigned to being ill; she expands her nature, and morally unbosoms herself.

In the deepening twilight, putting her little hands, now thin, into yours, she unburdens her whole heart to you. She speaks to you as she would to her own secret thought. You kiss her hands. She goes on without perceiving it, saying things that cannot be expressed here, but which, however, a feeble woman has need of saying. Her dreams, her invalid fancies, her little wo-

manly fears : "What if I should die, my dear? I can not leave you. But God will have mercy on us." From this she goes further, confesses this thing and that, a certain great sin that she has concealed from you. In fact, she has soon told you everything—had a complete confession.

"What, so little! is that all?" you ask; "And it is a great deal," she answers; "If I have done anything else, I do not remember it. But, my dear, what is the matter, that you are bathing my hands in your tears?"

Now night has closed in. The moon is not up; but the twinkling stars are bright enough for you. She is a little fatigued. She falls asleep without letting go your hand; and from that day forth she sleeps much more tranquilly, feeling a great harmony within her.

---

Marriage is confession. The union, the peace of two hearts, begins in this, that they tell everything to each other. And it is through this that they enter into peace and the good order of the mind, which in turn will bring back that of the body.

To confide in a third person, a stranger, who after all is but a man, is not the way to become pure; it is tempting both, passing from a storm into a tempest. That the unsettled soul, the sickly body, the whole suffering creature, may find perfect rest again, her other half, the sharer of her pain, must open to her the infinite of love, the infinite of confidence, and without exacting anything, lead her on to tell him everything—she being sure the while that she will be loved none the less for the confession.

Once relieved by this, you must strengthen the poor

rimid soul. Remember, that she is afraid of death. Let us state the facts fearlessly, without any unreasonable heroics. It is very easy for us, educated in the religion of the indulgent God of nature, to look our common destiny in the face. But she, impressed with the dogma of eternal punishment, though she may have received other ideas from you, still, in her suffering and debility, has painful foreshadowings of the future state. She does not conceal these, and like a helpless child seeks refuge in your arms. Then deal with her strongly, though gently. Betray no lack of decision with her; control, or put off your tears, and let her find in you a firm resting-place. Expand her feminine soul, narrowed by pain, confined by fear, to a conception of the great harmony—having which, we should be as willing to die as to live, in the just and unalterable law of all things. Here I know what a great effort it will cost you to accept, as an agent of God, him of whom the name even seems now so horrible to you—Death. Yet, believe me, he often spares those who look upon him without fear. If this your beloved, who rests entirely upon you and who lives upon your heart, resigns herself to the idea of dying there, when God requires it, she has so much the greater chance to live. The hope of immortality does not a little towards prolonging our stay upon earth.

May we ever retain the strength and authority necessary for these great and solemn moments! May we ever keep in the right path, and remain, to the one whom we love, the capable confessor, the natural priest. Let her who was an altar to the man, who so often afforded glimpses of the divine, recognise in him, this

day, her mediator through whom is transmitted to her the pardon of God.

But, even though you were less worthy, even though you had, in passing through a life of trade, carried off some of its stains upon you, love would renew you still. Its flame would consume all that. And you would find in an unexplored corner of your heart, the grandeur of divine desire to sustain her who depends solely on you. She is yours, and she has but you with whom to live or die. Upon you alone does it depend, whether she shall live, or ascend to her Maker in your arms.

---

I have never understood in what respect the priest and the physician were distinct from each other. All branches of medicine are null, blind, and unintelligent, if they do not begin at complete confession, at resignation to and reconciliation with the general government of the universe.

Who can do this in the case of a woman? He who knows her thoroughly beforehand, and who is herself. He is the one who was born to be her physician, a physician of the body and of the soul.

These two things, so completely harmonized in themselves, are inseparable. Let the young man think of and prepare himself for this. What an immense encouragement it will be to him, in his studies of the mind and of the body, to anticipate the profound happiness he will feel in being all in all to the object of his love!

---

In the coming age, education (relieved of its useless features) will always comprise a course of medical study. The present state of things is absurd. Who

ever would live must first know what life is, what are its distempers, and what its cures. These studies, moreover, are such a marvellous discipline to the mind, that he can hardly be called a *man* who has not pursued them.

Even to explain to the physician exactly how we are ill, to make him clearly and unmistakably understand that, we must be three-fourths a physician ourselves.

Most people will tell you that you cannot doctor yourself, nor your family—which amounts to saying, that we are most incapable of treating those whom we know best. I am, then, guided in this case, rather by what a physician of the South of France said to me: “Never shall my son or wife be treated by any one but myself. Not that some of my compeers may not be more learned than I, but that here I have an immense advantage over all of them—that of knowing completely, from top to bottom, the subject to be treated: the child springing from my loins is myself, and the woman finally transformed into me, is also myself.”

---

Individualization is ever progressive. The ignorant physicking of former times often effected cures; but why? because all things went by large classes, both the sick and the diseases. In those days, if I may so speak, the people were doctored *by wholesale*. The class and the trade, indicating the temperament, afforded all the information that was necessary, and suggested the evil and its remedy. But now classes are done away with, and so too is doctoring by classes. Its last glory is he whom I have already mentioned, the illustrious physician of the remains of *la Grande Armée*.

Everything has changed, no one man resembles another: everything is special, original, *individual*, very complicated, and not to be determined beforehand. Much study is necessary in order to seize this individuality, a long series of observations, an extreme assiduity. This, and especially the time required, is denied to physicians in large cities.

This enigma, this *individual*, is incurable by whoever does not know him completely, from head to foot, and through and through, in his present and in his past, to him who is not as it were inside of his other self, him who is not another himself.

The more you are one with him, the more able you will be to cure him.

And so, if you have lived long with this woman, if your existence, identical with hers by habit and love, produces each moment in you phenomena similar to those which are passing in her, so that your functions are the revelations of her, you are far advanced in her being, and may decide almost exactly what is fit and what is unfit for her, the real malady, and the possibility of erring.

You are her health, and she is your disease. When she is cured, she re-enters into her harmony with you.

---

*"What is woman ? Disease."*

HIPPOCRATES.

What is woman ? the physician.

The greatest outside doctor you can call, is more than satisfied after a few questions. He knows nothing of the disease but its crisis. But that is nothing at all ; the life of the patient must be known. What a stock of

time, patience, and let me add genius, would be required to completely confess her! But could she answer him? would she dare? . . . He is often obliged to content himself with very little.

The husband, on the contrary, knows everything.

You smile incredulously; I assert that even the subtlest dissembler, who manages to conceal certain circumstances from him, cannot, on the whole, prevent him, from the sole fact of their cohabitation, from knowing her entirely. He has noted her, by his finer senses, in all her exterior manifestations. He knows her in all her internal operations, her months, her days, her hours of steadiness and caprice. He foresees her humors, her thoughts, and even her smallest desires. Who could know the terrible details? he who loves or has loved, and who, eager and insatiable, has felt all, noted all, that she herself had forgotten. Still more, he has wondrously acted upon her. By their life in common, by fecundation, impregnation, and the profound metamorphosis which accompanies it, *he has made this woman!* The husband is as much of the wife, in this sense, as he is of the child.

He has made her, he can re-make her.

At least if any one can, it is he.

The creator of all things, Love, is also the all-powerful restorer. If once it languished and grew lukewarm, now, in these circumstances, it resumes its old ardor and intensity. Who could help loving the sick woman, who would not give all his heart up to her? Even if the poor suffering creature has been a little thoughtless, how can you remember it now? Humiliated under the hands of Nature, so fearful of displeasing, she is in reality more

charming than she ever was. She excuses herself, and asks pardon for everything, even for the most innocent things. The force of her gratitude inspires her with delightful and touching remarks. Her heart has become quite a different one; great thoughts take possession of it. And this because illness, that severe natural discipline, draws from the soul a refinement that no human culture could have effected. Love is even deepened by its own humility. At this time, the woman has the timidity of a child, is all love and trembling shame. And how can we help adoring her?

A touching contest this, between love and shame. The latter must yield, however, when they come to the remedies which so frighten women—if it is decided, for instance, that a blister must be applied. She would rather die than suffer that, if she were left to her own will; but she fears worse than death to displease or disobey. "And yet," she adds, "must I let him see me every day in this state? put him to such a trial? Ah! this will be the extinction of all love!"

The poor creature is so humiliated, that, bowed down each day under the loving hand that tends her, she does not even suppose that in her he still sees his wife, and she asks only for compassion. She thinks that desire is done with for ever. And great is her surprise, extreme her emotion, when she sees the flame still burning on, and the glorious ignorance in which Love remains of all that it knows, and all that it sees.

She then begins to understand that great and sovereign power of the heart which changes and transfigures everything, the independence of Love which is thought to be the slave of Nature, but which is also its king.



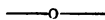
"What!" she exclaims, "have I still the power of pleasing! What! are my caresses still a happiness to him! My kiss his recompense!"

And behold! she is up again and reanimated. Her womanly royalty returns to her. Health will soon follow.

Everything that appertains to the woman we love is of precious importance. Everything about her charms us, and makes us adore her. Love comes from her by all the senses. Her physical life, taken in its ensemble and without omitting anything, is a universal enchantment. Hence results for her a state of infinite serenity of profound beatitude, the same state of grace that she catches a glimpse of in pregnancy, but now under what more difficult circumstances! To see that all that rendered her afraid and ashamed, all that she would have wished to conceal, is to him a joy and delight—that she is waited on by him, not as an effort of patience, but with desire and transport—is the miracle that saves her. She will live on, in spite of nature.



*BOOK FIFTH.*



**THE REJUVENESCENCE OF LOVE.**



## I

### WOMAN'S SECOND YOUTH.

How severe is Nature upon woman! Man, even though ten years older, is in his prime, strengthened in active and productive life, when she is failing. And even now, though beloved, she is no longer the same. Suffering has matured her, and made her look pale. Melancholy hours of reverie come to her in her convalescence. She sighs. For what?—she so beautiful, so touching, so accomplished! For Time, the great artist, the great master in beauty, has given to hers that supreme touch that disarms and melts all hearts. Yes, but even this charm owes its origin to her advancing age. The circulation of life, already less regular, announces to her (from a distance, it is true) that she will be cured of love, which constitutes woman, of that divine rhythm which month by month measured out her time.

Man, on the contrary, who has not suffered from the vital flux and reflux, man who, of love, has had but the happiness, who has not loved as she has (to creation and the point of death), man, relatively speaking, has lived a prosy life. He has worked much and hard, but slept and repaired his forces. The perfect equilibrium of physical receipt and outlay has been maintained in him. He is equal, or superior to, his former self. If he

has had no excesses up to his fortieth year, beyond that he will be found much stronger than before. He has escaped those alternations of health which so try one's youth; he has hardened himself for life, has taken root in it. And, as life then most certainly goes on by itself, as he lives without knowing that he lives (which is the physical perfection), he often works much more and much better, with a certainty, an infallibility of execution that a young hand never shows. Even among the most prolific of men, those who let out their lives in great floods for the nourishment of the human race, we see that their great works, those which have left their mark upon the world, have appeared at this age. Molière thus gave us the *Tartuffe*; Rousseau, *Emile* and the *Contrat Social*. It was even later in life that Voltaire published the first great product of his genius, that which has created Modern History. So in political life, Sully, Richelieu, Colbert, did nothing great until they were forty.

To sum up, we may say, that at the age when woman has finished her principal work, and is about to lose, or already has lost, her creative faculty, man exercises his with powerful effect. And this in every sense, in love, in business, and in the sphere of thought.

Is it all over with the woman then? Far from it. The charmfulness of heart and beauty, the grace, the brilliant mind, the elevation of her views, of her character, which often come at this age, all announce that she is called to a mysterious duty, more invisible, more inexplicable, more connected, perhaps, with a touching and a holy object. What this will be we cannot tell; but I warrant you beforehand that it will be a work of love. Seized in the cradle by love, living on and by

t, she will go on till death, always loving more and more.

Would you know the real cause of her sadness? It is not her bad health, nor her fleeting youth; neither her prospectively dreary life, nor even Death, to whom she has been very near, and who obscures the horizon with his sombre clouds. What saddens her is the semi-divorce which, in spite of him and in spite of her, is made between them by the mere force of circumstances. He who formerly sacrificed everything, abandoned everything for her, still loves her. She does not doubt it. But, after all, now that she is better, he rushes off again to business, labor, and the struggles of life. He is getting old, and has no time to lose. The more pure and faithful a man is, the more active he is; ever impatient to move, to do, and to create. He looks forward to glory, it matters little for what. The proved ability in matters of grave import, the fidelity with which fortune favors only those of strong will, are the honor and glory of the man, the pride of the woman. But we must confess that it is also a cause of uneasiness to woman in her middle age. He said, "You will love me, I am sure; for I shall be great." And he has kept his word. His successes have made him great. He knows that she has indirectly contributed much towards this. Never, without the happiness, the peace of heart, the mutual comforting that he has found in her, could he have been each day equal to such efforts. She has prepared his triumphs for him. And the invincible strength with which, at the decisive time, he carried off the prize, he took from her in the morning, when,

serene through love, she commanded him to return that night a conqueror.

By the mercy of God all his undertakings have prevailed. He is now powerful and influential in matters of greatest moment. His ship now rides upon the waves, with both wind and tide in its favor. She, seated on the shore, admires him, but follows him no longer. Sometimes her eyes are dazzled, and she can scarcely keep the reckoning of this great and fortunate voyage. Fortunate, did I say? It is far from being so to her loving and faithful heart, which says, "He is off yonder. Oh, that I were with him!"

Mockery of Fate! When she was younger and less intelligent, in reality even less loving—when she only suffered herself to be loved, when she was nothing but one of God's beautiful creatures, a pleasant thing—she had the unspeakable happiness of being united to him in an apparent oneness; but now that she is an intellectual being, an individual, now when her expanded heart contains an ocean of love, fortune and success hold him apart from her. So far, though so near! One day of glory for him perhaps, and to-morrow her life will have passed away.

In regarding his manly countenance, his powerful frame, all the royal beauty and the vigorous joy that Nature bestows upon the lusty man from whom she still expects great things, his wife admires him, dreams of him, is happy . . . and sad. Youth is intact in him; his powers of loving are unimpaired. When the torrent of life is stirred into action will he not return to the illusions of his youth? All think so. Every one believes that the treasure he has at home, that gentle and



touching beauty, that too complete perfection, will not hold him back for ever. On all sides the world of depraved men and equivocal women, by all the means in their power, by intrigue, cunning, audacity, ridicule, irony, everything, work together to disturb the serenity, to break in upon the privacy of the successful man of the day. Is the poor little dove in the cote ignorant of this? No; from a distance she sees enough of it to crush her heart down. What can she do about it? She takes good care not to approach this monster of a world, which frightens her so. The world, which, on its side, has come to her and learned that she is too pure for anything to be hoped from her, turns its back upon her, and goes after a more easy virtue.

Humbled by solitude, she dares not compare herself with the reigning beauties of the day. Those haughty Amazons, whom from afar she sees passing by, she admires sincerely, and not without a little fear. They must be queens, princesses, or at least great ladies, to be caracoling on such splendid coursers. She considers herself defeated beforehand. "Alas! what virtue, what discretion, what heroism of love can resist these Alcinas, these triumphant Clorindas? woe to poor Herminia! . . ."

She is completely ignorant of what her husband, nearer to them, sees: their misery and moral repulsiveness. All the efforts recently made to deck up that pitiful idol of the day, the *kept woman*—a base term of distinction between *la dame galante* and the woman of the town—have failed to invest her with beauty. Still ideal, though painfully inconsistent, in *Isidora*, she has sustained a terrible fall to the real in *la Dame aux Camellias*. The

skill and talent of the author have not sufficed to conceal the shocking inharmoniousness of this creation, a refined consumptive, who, nevertheless, he tells us, "drinks and swears like a street-porter."

If our husband, going by chance into his friend's house, sees his shocking mistress, so gross under all her elegance, he will remain faithful for ever.

Rousseau was right in making a distinction between a woman and a lady. Is this a matter of rank and fortune? Not at all. It is a distinction of the heart. I have seen an old washerwoman who was a lady, and more than a lady; she would have graced the throne of the world.

Some day, when the husband returns from visiting the friend in question, when he has been bored and worn out with his "little girl," who can talk only after drinking, he finds his wife surrounded by earnest men who have come on business. She astonishes them with the extent of her knowledge and her practical mind. "How is this?" he asks. "Who has taught her this? . . . She knows everything without having learned it."

How interesting is she at this moment! I have often had the pleasure of observing the excellence of the wife when she wished to become the auxiliary of her husband, when she entered into his ideas and his business, took an absorbing delight in them, and upheld his opinions with even more vivacity than he could have brought to bear on them himself. Far from taking sides against her, I have joined her, nearly always adding a word to her husband's honor, to strengthen their union. I have always present to me, in this world, the Religion of Love, and the desire of propagating it.

Picture then to yourself the happy husband at the moment of his unexpected return, when he sees her fighting for him. How surprised, how delighted he is! She is Shakespeare's Desdemona, with a helmet on. He smiles as he embraces her, saying like Othello: "O, my fair warrior!"

But these word-combats are nothing to her. How nappy would she be to really aid him. Is she not as a younger brother to him? She has his movements, his gestures, his handwriting even. If he has gone to bed late and sleeps a little longer than usual, he does not find her beside him in the morning. At his desk sits some one who has quietly got up at four o'clock, and is writing his urgent letters. And this is apparently some one who fully understands his thoughts, knows or divines everything. A scholar of his perhaps, or a charming little secretary? Style her what you will.

She has taken both sexes upon herself, and in her timid audacity are combined the charms of the young man and the child. Her thirty-six years are but as fifteen. But the docile scholar, if he but deserve it, will be transformed into the loving and obedient woman. In the morning he wakes up, and not seeing her beside him, is alarmed and calls to her. The pen is thrown aside, and M. le Secrétaire hastens to his bedside, an humble page.

How he is affected by this! He gently draws her towards him. But in her chasteness she seats herself on the side of the bed. In a sacred transport, he would pour out his heart to her, place it in her hand, disclose to her, at last, the mysteries of his art, or the secrets of his business. "Why can I not suppress time for you!"

he exclaims, "do away with the long succession of efforts and thoughts, with which we buy so dearly the results of life! give you, without fatigue, the world and its science! infuse it all in a kiss!" But, almost at the first word, he sees the miracle performed. God accords to purity a singular gift of intelligence. Her sense of right, which no lie, no corrupting sophism, has ever warped, enables her to seize at once the very essence of the abstruse enigma. How surprised is he! how happy is she! In her childish vivacity she exclaims: "I have understood you then!"

But nothing that she touches can fail to be embellished thereby. She timidly essays to take up what he has just said; into what seems dry and tame, she infuses her womanly grace and the freshness of nature. It is as if the barren sea-shore, gladdened by a brook, should suddenly bloom with flowers.

A delicious discovery it is, to see her for the first time unfold to a loving eye her infinite mystery of grace, which, with a certain maiden modesty, she had always kept back. This virginity, reserved for the present moment, and which could not reveal itself before, she now gives up, and offers it to love—the unlooked-for flower of the soul.

---

## II.

### SHE PRESCRIBES AND REGULATES HIS DIET AND HIS RECREATIONS.

SEEMING her so obedient, so docile, and so attentive a pupil, following out her husband's ideas and treasuring up his words, you imagine that he is master in everything. It is exactly the contrary.

Now that she is himself, imbued and impregnated with him, now that she is his soul (and his soul reserved pure), it is greatly to his interest that she should administer, rule, and reign in the house.

To speak frankly, he is no longer capable of this. The hurly-burly of life, the increased action, has so hustled him along from day to day, that his little interior world becomes almost foreign to him. This is an effect of the progress of the age, of absorption in a special business; it is even the effect of success: the man, as if in a vertigo, gets farther and farther away from himself. What would become of him if he should give himself up entirely to this centrifugal movement? if the centre should fail him, if the fixed point to which nature obliges him to return each day for a new supply of strength, should become vacillating, and no longer afford him support or rest? Yet may all this be observed in the house where the wife, the sure guardian of the man, does not keep watch over his fireside.

Strange is the inconsistency of the times. If the object be to outshine our fellows, to amass a fortune,

## 278      She Prescribes and Regulates

every one is what is called *poetic*; that is grossly material. If it be a question of supplying or renewing the strength and activity by which we shine or make money, we have all the indifference of a spiritualist, who believes that he owes nothing to the body but everything to the mind. We are generally fed by our servants, that is to say, our enemies; or what is still worse, by those great cooking laboratories which daily supply the same food to thousands of men, all differing in health, temperament, and social position, having each different necessities. What is wholesome food for one is poison to another.

If you despise the body thus (though it is the indispensable agent of your faculties), respect your mind, your judgment, which, you must know, are day by day influenced by your diet. We must drop pride, and speak of things as they are. Your cook governs you. The unhealthy and irritating food that she has given you for dinner will to-night disturb your stomach, and thence your mind. To-morrow, or later, by its inward irritation, it will impel you to hasty and violent resolutions, perhaps to some act of libertinism or egregious folly.

I maintain, Gentlemen "on 'Change," that it is the influence of food, more than any forethought of your own, which, holding dominion over your moods, decides the rise and fall of stocks.

I who have always defended the rights of the mind, must here be permitted to speak of these matters of plain common sense, which every one else talks about but idly, as everything is talked about nowadays, without even a thought of remedy.

To the evil Circe who transforms men into beasts, we must oppose the good Circe, who will transform beasts into men. This good Circe is the loving and foreseeing wife, who day by day expends her solicitude upon your physical life, who knows no duty so noble, so imperative, so sacred, as the preservation of the one whom she loves. She would leave an important letter, an urgent and serious work in which she had been engaged, to help you, if a superior task required her presence—the preparation of the dishes which are to refresh you at dinner.

She does not readily trust to that stupid and careless girl, who will irritate your stomach, or feed you on mere nothings, tickling your palate instead of renewing your strength. She will put her own hands to the work, those hands so royally beautiful, that nature seems to have made them solely for the homage and the kisses of kings. Your life is her life; who then has more interest than she in renewing your strength? She will slight nothing to this end. For whom then is the first smile of re-blooming nature, if not for her? It is for you to repay her in love.

She has constantly before her eyes, in her memory, and in her heart, the complete balance and poise of your life; she sees clearly your material equilibrium, and the equilibrium of your forces—all your expenditures in labor, in words, or in exercise, to which she makes your appetites subordinate. We have ample reason, while scolding a little, to call her *economical*. Of what is she most economical?—money? No, but of that of which she speaks the least, of that which concerns herself. She is your never-resting physician, but one who administers a preventive medicine, who is ever cautious and

## 280      She Prescribes and Regulates

moderate, and who especially takes care that by spending little, and gaining a great deal, repairing always largely, you shall remain equal, more than equal, to the exigencies of your profession. It is love that, at her expense, makes you admired in society, for the intense brilliancy of your glances, your vigorous life, your energetic activity.

In nothing that relates to love is she ignorant. She knows, as well as any one, not only the nutritive value of varieties of food, but the time required for their digestion—some rapid in their action, others, on the contrary, slow, but which will exert a powerful influence in time. She also knows perfectly well that strong and exciting food will not act with its full power on the day that it is required, if it is not preceded, a few days before, by a simpler diet which shall restore the organs to their youthful susceptibility, and augment their powers of assimilation.

---

So anxious is she in this matter, that she often watches her husband eating, instead of eating herself. With all her respect for him she does not trust him entirely. The man who comes home, having spent much vital force during the day, is naturally too anxious to restore it to take any heed to the means. Devoted to works of strength, every man has animal inclinations; he wants tonics—often too much of them. She, who is not fatigued, having much more temperance and judgment, does her best to check him in this error, to deceive him a little, if necessary. People admire women without art; for my part, I like them to have a great deal of it, all sorts of pious ruses with which love inspires them for



our happiness. This woman, so pure and chaste, who takes such good care of him, would not, however, hesitate to sacrifice herself, if need be, in order to turn his mind to other matters ; she is his nurse after all. And if the child is not reasonable, it is better for her, without making any disturbance, to play the child a little herself. This tender hindering, which surprises and charms him (especially through his vanity), makes him think that the most sensible woman has sometimes her weak moments, while in reality it is at this very time that her loving intelligence performs its well-considered office, as a mentor and a physician.

---

Women do not know their power, or else they do not care to employ it in the interests of the family. For it is certain, that with a husband of uniform habits, who is in good health, and neither has, nor wishes for, any outside attachment, she can at certain times do anything she pleases. Man's love is impatient and incapable of waiting ; hence it is easily brought to terms. The generating crisis, which in woman occurs every twenty days, solemn and painful, and much less exacting, returns to man every four days (if we assume the average given by Haller). And this is not, as is believed, a mere requirement of pleasure, but an actual necessity of a mental and physical renewing. If this be not fulfilled, it leaves the whole organism in a state of heavy dejection and discomposure ; the vital fluid deprived of issue, is like a pestilent stagnation. True life is in action. Woman, who is often sickly, exhausted by confinement and habitual loss of vitality, seldom understands the very different constitution of man, whose strength, subject

## 282      She Prescribes and Regulates

to no exhaustion, remains uncontracted, hence the persistence of desire, which he experiences often at a very late period of life. He soon fatigues and wearies her. He is frequently put off without pity or consideration, and sometimes with ridicule.

In short, they so manage things that, not to annoy an already faded wife, he takes a young mistress.

What has created, and set up against wives, the *Dame aux Camellias*? Their own haughty prudishness.

---

When the husband hazards a word of love in the evening, you say to him, "How silly you are! You are jesting!" No, Madame, he is often very much in earnest; he suffers, and requires forgetfulness. He has need of that sweet and maternal consolation which woman owes to the labors of man. It is he who braves for you the great battles of this life, whose repose and pleasures you enjoy. He needs to forget his business cares, the injustice and tyranny of his employer, the intrigue and calumny of his rivals. A kiss from you, a smile from you, a sweet return of affection, a sympathy for his efforts, in short the happiness of that mental and material union which renews the worn-out soul, is what he needs.

"But, my dear, at our age" (they are perhaps forty years old), "now that we have grown-up children! It is ridiculous."

He has seen her all the evening appear youthful and agreeable for a pretentious fool, on whom she has lavished her sweetest smiles; but now she calls herself old. He takes her at her word, and goes off elsewhere.

He goes away, not only denied, but mortified. In

mary cases the divorce may be dated from that evening. He avoids her, he hates her. The change is often a rapid one. To-morrow he has a mistress, and launches forth into another life. Woe to his wife and children !

She will say, perhaps, "Why accuse me? I know perfectly well to what I am bound by the commandments of God and of the Church, by the marriage vow. I was to give him children, and I have given them. I have refused to do no duty that I owed him. I undergo everything that must be undergone. But I will do nothing for empty pleasure, for amusement, for caprice."

Do you think that dreary passiveness, which, even in the embrace, communicates a death-like coldness, is acceptable; that the cool irony which observes, criticizes, and even sneers, in this sacred moment, is regarded as reciprocation? . . . . No: rather is it the solitude of solitudes, a divorce in complete union, despair! . . . . What celibacy is not better than this? Rather settle the matter like Origène, and let the sword end it.

---

We know that she is chaste with her husband; but now how is she with others? Are we sure that what is denied to him is not granted to a friend?

You, Madam, who know how to measure out happiness in such nice proportions, listen to this:

The mother asks the child, in helping him to sweetmeats, how much he wants? He answers: "I want *too much*." Every time that preserves had been given to him, he had been told that more than *that* would be *too much*. And it is just this "too much" that he wants.

It is just so with love; *enough* does not satisfy it at all

"But," you ask, "does this too much mean those extraordinary and humiliating things that the ancient custom grants so liberally to conjugal exigencies—which so lower the woman, by giving her over completely to the senseless caprice of her husband?"

Have no such fear. To the clever, amiable, innocently gay and loving woman, this too much, which frightens you so, is often very little. Often it is such a trifle that she would scarcely dare to speak of it; it would appear so silly, the merest child's play.

The more intense, care-laden, planning and combating, that a man's life is out of doors, the more kind comforting he requires at home. A sensible woman knows what he needs at these times. She knows that he does not consider her less thoughtful, less worthy in reality, for any playfulness she may treat him to; on the contrary, the more he finds her even so, the more pleased he is at the contrast. He feels her affection in this, and he is soothed by it. That this dear partner, whom he knows to be so zealous for his sake, should suddenly forget all other affairs, and be alive but to one alone, that of consoling, entertaining, and amusing him, affects him powerfully. He laughs, but he is touched by it. A loving word, an unlooked-for caress, the familiarity of some little action in which the young girl again appears, will have wonderful effect. No seriousness nor sorrow can withstand them. Never did the changing sea, in the dark hour when you could see only clouds overhanging it, present, in the shifting of the wind, so lovely a clearing-up.

Woman is not formed, as we are, in the uniformity of an educational mould. It is this which leaves her, at

every period of life, beautiful in instincts, in surprises, in unlooked-for graces. She has wonderful originality. The simplest has in her often, endless responses to nature, hidden and secret beauties, a smartness and charmingness of reply, a youthful and pretty movement, that her husband in ten, twenty years, has never shown. Such a one, though long married, does not the less retain a certain relative innocence, forgetting (through frivolity, if you choose) all that would have faded her and made her old. She remains new, in one sense, and being pressed by love, replies with singular artlessness, and a charming ignorance of what she has learned every day of her life.

This cannot be imitated. The innocence of the wife is a mystery of the holy of holies, which no one out of it can imagine. All other women are premeditated, or are unconstrained only in the ugliness of intoxication. But she who is yours for life, without any thought for the future, with no reserve of coquetry, gives herself up to nature in complete sincerity, and is thereby so much the more beautiful, more touching and delicious. Hers is not the cat's play, nor the calculated obscenity, nor the false and discordant graces of your cold mistresses, whose hearts are like a violin, without a soul, squeaking under the bow. The sweet sportiveness of a woman who laughs, frolics, and says, "I am silly; but what of that, if it is for you?" is the Divine Comedy, the secret Christmas carol of marriage, of which you will find elsewhere but a dismal counterfeit. This laughing grace, which we so adore in little children, is in a different way charming (because unexpected) in the young wife—so discreet in the absence of him she loves, and so grave

## 286 She Refines his Mind, or Inspires it.

to all chance-comers. Everyone says: "She is not cheerful; perhaps he renders her unhappy." But when he returns, she feels herself at ease, and gaily locks the door.

---

### III.

#### SHE REFINES HIS MIND, OR INSPIRES IT.

**SAVAGES** are afraid of pleasure. "It hamstring a man," they say. Of course, if a warrior were about to start off fasting on a hunt of two hundred leagues over the snow, as often happens, or to be chased to the death by a hostile tribe—in such trying circumstances he would do wisely to husband his strength.

In the civilized state it is different. If love weakens the animal force, and that material imagination which, under the influence of the blood, inspires the mind with its grosser fancies, in return it refines the nicer faculties of a man. The contact of a pure and beloved woman, whose heart throbs responsive to your own, communicates something of the moral excellence of her sweet serenity. The mind is harmonized thereby; the days are gloriously clear. The sanguine flood, and its companion, that carnal and animal poetry which belongs to the temperament, are for the moment suppressed; and the fantastic clouds, with which they obscured the mind, rolling away, disclose to you the Real in an intensity of

light. Logic, and the faculties of observation and of analysis, that trinity of Invention, have their complete freedom and fertility.

For whatever requires continuousness, and is to be attained by pursuing a long train of thought, successive problems of the known and the unknown, a harmonious condition is needed; this is procured only by subduing that plethora of life which would retard all progress. The feverish mirages which this occasions, make us absurdly poetic or pitifully fanciful, turn us to the right or to the left, and cause us constantly to wander from the right road to the truth. Nothing obscures the mind more than this rutting, or the sickly and negative condition of complete abstinence—a condition really impotent, for virility then paralyzes or devours itself.

There is no doubt that the great drags on life are desire and virility. But, that these may bear fruit, their ruggedness must be grafted on the softness of the feminine organization. What a miracle does nature here perform! Genius, arrested yesterday on the road to invention by one of those problems to which there seems no solution, having turned it over on every side, at last gives it up in despair, and sadly sits down by the fire. *She* soon observes his sadness: "Why, what is the matter with you?" she asks. "I cannot bear to see you looking so sad. Let your ideas alone; forget all about it, I pray you, and be happy now." It is precisely this moment of forgetfulness and happiness which has changed everything. His insight is renewed, his powers refreshed, he is newly electrified for performance. He has become another man. How is this? Magnetized by the woman, by that natural grace and amiable facility

## 288 She Refines his Mind, or Inspires it.

which she has, and communicates to all, he laughs at the slight obstacle which had impeded him the day before.

---

Being at Montpellier, I was inspired with religious feeling on seeing an old and stained sheet of paper, a fly-leaf from a book of Puget's, where, among some indistinct sketches, he had written at the top of the page these lines of the old poet :

*"Casta placent superis. Castà cum mente venito,  
Et manibus puris, sumito fontis aquam."*

I experienced such emotion as one feels in entering a great church or a Roman tomb, or the amphitheatre at Arles. It is evident that this man, whose mission it was to express the suffering soul of a century, in beginning his work makes to God and to his art his voluntary sacrifice. He feels that he is responsible, and he longs to be strong and worthy.

Every work of his is a sigh. Was it Milo caught in the oak? was it the broken down and suffering Atlases of Toulon, or the poor little Andromeda, swooning with pain even in her preservation, that he dreamed over then? I know not. But I see that then he gathered himself up, and concentrated his energies, asking strength of pure love, to create those everlasting works which will for ever fill all hearts with tenderness and pity.

Human art has no processes of its own, no power but to imitate divine art. What has the latter done, and what is it doing? From the great torrent of life Love creates generations of men, the whole ascending progress of races. And with a concentrated drop from this



torrent it has created, and still creates, the world of invention and all the procession of ideas.

At what price is this concentration of vital force, through abstinence from pleasure, fruitful in works of thought? On the supreme condition of its being free. A sacrifice is only a sacrifice in being truly voluntary. Liberty alone deserves; liberty alone is fruitful.

Captive love, entrenched in walls, chaste in spite of itself, is barren. It turns against itself. Its flame but adds to its torture, and never grows. The boasted age of celibacy (the Middle Ages) was only productive of really great results in married men. Abailard was married; so was Dante. The Free-Masons, who have found and realized their proper art, lived around the churches in families, and continued those great works from century to century by hereditary labor.

Marriage is the only thing which at once supplies Genius with its two essential powers: harmony by pure happiness, and at times brilliancy by voluntary abstinence, and a free postponement of pleasure.

The beauty and efficacy of this sacrifice lie in its freedom, and in that it results from the mutual understanding and perfect unanimity of two persons who love each other.

Woman is very noble in this instance. She desires man to be strong, useful, and productive. Individual love is sacrificed to a greater love, and so shares its grandeur.

Here the two souls are the same. The gratitude of posterity must not separate them.

Puget was married, and in his palpitating works one perceives sensibly how much it must have cost him.

## 290 She Refines his Mind, or Inspires it.

You may trace there the heart, the magnetizing purity, of a wife who desired him to love in art, to bestow upon marble the love he would have given to her, the excess of life's essence. She was not jealous of the charming Andromeda, but immolated herself to her rival. When the great artist, burning with the sacred fire, rose to write the lines you have just read, I imagine I hear the voice of that sainted wife, saying: "My love, remember Andromeda, and let us reserve all our energies for her. Love her, for she is my child!"

---

He did well to write: "Purity pleases God." It helps us to imitate God, and to create like Him.

But purity is not a savage isolation. It is increased, at times, by contact with what is pure. Who has not passed one of those troubled nights when an inward storm rages; when the mind, pitifully oppressed by shameful desires, flounders in the mire? Fortunately, dawn comes at last; beside you you see innocence and serenity. She opens her eyes, smiles—and all evil spirits take flight. Your dreams you dare not tell; you wish to forget them. In love's holy chalice you find all your former self, your soul, your virtue, your intelligence, with a ray of the dawn, with a pearl of the dew.

The pure woman, in whom her husband has set up his altar, who is united to him in heart, who thinks and desires as he does, has in her a strange mystery of spiritual fruitfulness which no one has yet described. What the fable tells of the Son of the Earth, who, to regain his strength, had but to touch the maternal bosom, she realizes to the letter. She is really Nature, loving, kind, and holy, who, by mere physical contact, by the virtue

of love, starts a flood of mental life. If you have a great thought, tell it to her in the evening, or at night. Happy in your confidence, happy in the hope of seeing you attain still greater eminence, she is thrilled, her heart is full of joy, and she embraces you. This is a sacred moment; respect it. Your heart is rich in its fulness; keep it exalted. Arise in the kingliness that he feels who is loved; arise with the proud sentiment of preserving your love entire. Only to have touched your divinity is happiness enough for that day.

The austere joy of sacrifice, the charm of paradise, both these powers are with you. Now you may say: "To-day I am in force, I can do whatsoever I will."

So the Reuss or the Rhone, those swift Alpine streams, in traversing the beautiful lakes which detain them momentarily, do not so end their courses. They gather there immense scope and power. Re-issuing, nothing is impossible to them. Changed to a brilliant blue, they roll on, mirroring in their bosoms the sublime scenery, and the beautiful skies which overhang them.



#### IV.

#### THERE ARE NO OLD WOMEN.

VASARI made a singular remark about the old master Giotto, the creator of Italian art. "He was the first to put goodness into the expression of heads."

The lustre of goodness is the soul of modern art. Its works affect our hearts precisely in the proportion that they are expressive of goodness.

The noble *Madonnas* of Raphael are admired as pictures; but who was ever in love with them? On the other hand, the *Magdalen* of Titian (a simple head, of Venice), a fisherman's girl, good, pretty, and strong, though not very young, is so touching in her tears, that you at once exclaim, "Who could have the heart to afflict such a good creature? Speak, say what you will! I should so like to console you!"

Titian preferred to paint beautiful women at thirty. Rubens goes without difficulty as far as forty, and beyond. Van Dyck does not recognise age at all; with him, art is free. He entertained a sovereign contempt for time. That powerful magician, Rembrandt, does more: by a gesture, a look, a smile, he banishes all age. The life, the goodness, and the intelligence, suffice to charm us: "What was the model?" Adorable! "And beautiful?" I do not remember; I have forgotten entirely.

The ignorant art of the Middle Ages held that youth and beauty were synonymous. For the mother of Christ, it gives us stiff and insipid little girls. The great painters of modern times, being very intelligent observers, soon saw that beauty, like everything else, needs time to become perfect and complete. They were the first to discover the mystery, unknown to antiquity, that face and form do not reach the fulness of their beauty at the same time. The first is faded, when the second is in full bloom.

The habit we have of judging woman by that which fades the soonest (the face), is a serious cruelty. But

with us, in France especially, where the mobile physiognomy, the quick eye, the graceful, smiling and eloquent mouth, are in constant agitation, the muscles, quickly trained to every movement, have a flexibility and suppleness opposed to the fixed and tense firmness of Northern beauty. A French woman has a thousand tricks and changes of feature to every ten of the German woman. Then the face soon grows *weary*. Is that as much as to say that our flesh is less firm? On the contrary, a wound for which the German woman would require surgical aid, in the French woman cures itself.

It is not a rare thing for the body of the latter to be twenty-five and her face forty—wrinkles form around her eyes, and in her cheeks; while on the other hand her knees and elbows, which were formerly angular, have now pretty little dimples. The same contrast is visible in the skin: in the face, where it has been stretched by the constant play of the muscles, it has already grown rougher; while everywhere else, delicately filled out, it is still young, and combines the lovely hues of the lily and the rose.

This fullness of form does not produce a sensual effect, as much as might be believed. It has also its moral influences. It is singularly favorable to the augmentation and display of that expression of goodness which the woman often wears when, untroubled by rivalries and feminine crosses, she follows the kindly instincts of a sympathetic heart. Her beautiful white arms, her exquisitely rounded and delicate chin, an inexpressible tenderness everywhere visible in her, present the most charming idea of maternity. Not the exclusive mater-

nity of a young wife, wholly concentrated on her child, and often indifferent to everything else ; but an extreme kindness towards everybody. This is manifested in her looks and caresses ; and, if there be any work of charity to do, any unfortunate to help, in the moist eye, and the agitation of a bosom rich with pity and love.

It is a very bad sign of the times when the men do not appreciate this beauty of goodness—a hateful time, indeed, in which, having no longer the need of reciprocity, and really seeking only solitary pleasure, they demand it of the youngest of the young ; and, by an accursed climax, of childhood itself.

These barbarians are punished in more ways than one. They become more and more barbarous, gross in manners and in language. A generation which does not spring from women of standing, is a generation of boors.

Selfish, cruel, and brutal love eats out everything, like aqua-fortis. Where it has once passed, nothing is left ; that place is barren for ever after.

And after all, to come to what their depraved tastes, their vile and impotent fancies, look for and require even at the price of crime, the poor young victim has nothing in reality to satisfy these fierce exactions. Badly nourished and of meagre form, what, alas ! can she give but pain ?

As for the gay and splendid daughters of luxury and notoriety, of the theatre and the promenade, who pick your very bones, are you sure that those beauties, with their bacchanalian revels, their infernal lives, their sleepless nights, could bear comparison in another Judgment of Paris, with the lady who, discreet and pure, has

always led a sober life? If such insolent *lions* were even twenty years younger, they would still be humiliated.

---

Besides, a lady is always a lady. Her natural elegance, the harmony which is in her, suffices to enchain the heart more powerfully than the "*half* lady" can ever hope to do, whose harmony is easily disturbed by any trifling vexation.

In the Middle Ages, the grand lady, whom the little page always waited upon on his knees, or whose train he bore, was infallibly both young and beautiful. For her were his imagination, his emotions first aroused. It is the same in all times. The fine lady of to-day, who, at her morning toilet, among laces and perfumes, thinks it of little consequence to give an order or a note to her young attendant, even though she be quite mature and almost old, often sets his heart throbbing; she is young for him in that elegance and perfume, from which he departs like one intoxicated.

Who is deceived then—the child or his mistress? Perhaps it is not he. His instinct tells him that in his lady, who has lost somewhat of her external splendor and visible charm, there yet resides a great power which she can still exercise. *There are no old women*; every one of them, at no matter what age, if she is good and loving, treats man to a glimpse of the infinite. And not alone the infinite of the moment—often that of the future. She breathes upon him, and it is a gift. All who see him afterwards say, without being able to explain it, "What! is he possessed? He is a born genius."

There were numberless Rousseaus before Rousseau, all

cunning and eloquent reasoners; and yet not one of them attracted the world's attention. A woman breathes upon *this one*, with love, maternal love, and Jean Jacques is the result.

---

## V.

## AUTUMNAL ASPIRATIONS.

At the close of September (while I am writing this), the year is ripe. It reaches its completion not only in the harvest, but in all its other harmonies, in the perfect temperature, and the perfect balance of night and day. The sky and the earth correspond; veiled by the morning mist, the sun rises late, as if it had not much to do; and every one seems also to have finished his work. It is as though it were Sunday, or the repose of evening. And what is autumn, after all, but the evening of the year?

Beautiful season!—at once pleasant and pensive. A few flowers yet remain, but they drop off one by one. The aster resists the season's advance. The cold, splendid dahlia still struggles on, through all October, despite the morning frost. The swallows sail around and around in the air, calling to each other. In the north, the Stork, having on one foot gravely planned his journey, prepares to desert his favorite haunts.

All this is much more impressive in places by the sea,



which is near them, without being seen from them; so that you cannot behold its sublime scenes, but can hear its sublime voice. The earth, already in repose and silence, hearkens to the lamentations and the wrath of old Ocean, who strikes upon the beach, recoils and strikes again, in solemn iteration—that deep bass which one hears, less with the ear than with the breast, which strikes the shore more lightly than it does the heart of man. Melancholy warning, with the measured appeal of the pendulum of Time!

I see yonder a lady (the one whom this book found in her youth, and has accompanied to her declining age), walking pensively in a small garden; it is already stripped of its blossoms, but sheltered, like those we see behind our cliffs in France, or in the lowlands of Holland. The exotics have already been placed in the green-house. The fallen leaves have unveiled the statues near them, which afford increased pleasure now that the flowers are gone. These are luxuries of art, which somewhat contrast with the very simple yet modest and dignified toilet of the lady—a blond or grey silk, relieved only by a lilac ribbon.

Though without ornament, she is none the less elegant: elegant for her husband, and simple to the profit of the poor.

She reaches the end of the walk and turns round. We have now an opportunity to observe her. But have I not seen her already in the museums of Amsterdam or the Hague? She recalls to me one of Philip de Champagne's ladies—one who took possession of my heart at first sight, so frank yet so chaste, intelligent but simple-minded, having no subtilty with which to keep

clear of the snares of the world. This woman has clung to me for thirty years, persistently returning, making me concerned for her, and forcing me to ask myself what was her name? What became of her? Was she happy here in this world? And how did she get through life?

She reminds me of another portrait, a Van Dyck, a poor pale and sickly lady. The white-satinness of her incomparably delicate skin adorns a body which is wasting away. In her beautiful eyes is a deep melancholy—that of age, of the heart's sorrows, or perhaps of the climate. Hers is the vague and far-reaching look of a person who has always had before her eyes the vast Northern Ocean, the great grayish sea, utterly deserted save by the sea-gull in his flight.

---

But let us return to the one here. If I did not fear to disturb her quiet meditations, I would say: "Are you also melancholy, Madame? What can be wrong with you, who are so discreet, so sensible and so resigned?"

"What is it, sir?" she answers—"That which everything feels at this time, a desire for the great passage, a need of taking flight. But I have no beautiful wings—neither the white sails of the swan, nor the false wings of the swallow. I am held down, held tightly here. God calls me, and yet I feel myself bound to my nest. Bound by whom? by God himself. This is the discrepancy in my nature. These birds are happy; they emigrate in families. We, almost always, one by one, make a solitary migration towards the other life. In life we were together, but we start out alone on the unknown journey. Age brings fear and sadness to those who

love. I hope, believe and trust. I shall die only to live again. But, alas! if in that second life I should not see my beloved!

"Do you wish to know more of my melancholy? I am sad at being still so imperfect. He calls me his sanctuary, and how little do I deserve the name! I had wished to retain for him the true purity of childhood, a virgin treasure of wisdom, a place of repose which should be the paradise of his heart, I had wished to pluck a thorn each day from this garden of his, and add to it a flower. This culture has resulted poorly, and I am no longer capable of anything."

These are her dilemmas, the questions and the answers that she imagines, while walking up and down, such the misgivings which at this moment have wrinkled her beautiful brow—a brow so pure that time respects it, and dares not touch it yet.

Is this really all? Is this sadness explained solely by these thoughts of the future, these high aspirations towards supreme perfection? I, who know you, Madame, having seen you when you were yet very young, dare to say that your heart contains a secret and keeps it. You seem afraid of saddening your husband? Or might we believe that a woman always retains, even late in life, a little timidity at confessing certain things?

"You will have it then?" she replies. "Frankly, the thought that so saddens and weighs me down is that tomorrow I shall be old. . . . ."

"I am not a fool, to revolt against God's will. What should I care for growing old, if I were alone? But I love, and am still loved. Love is a double mystery. It is not of the mind alone; something else is needed. Is

not the happiness conferred upon me by a faithful, loving, and inexhaustibly youthful husband, an embarrassing thing when I feel the progress of time? It is for his sake that I would retain some portion of that which first pleased him. He has always had in me (he said to himself) a renewing of the heart, a feast of life. His illusion continues, not mine. I dare not tell him my thoughts, my uneasiness. If I keep silent, if I continue to receive the adoration of which I am so little worthy, I shall be vexed with, and accuse, myself of being vain and false. His love and admiration humiliate me; it seems to me that his transports are for another, not for me."

"You may rest assured, Madame, that the touching humility, the solicitude, the emotional and graceful tenderness which desires to bestow without stint, is a stimulus to love. The older one grows, the more he sees that the most truly charming woman is she who feels most, who gives herself up without reservation, and is unhappy because she has nothing more to give.

"It is this, too, which accounts for that ardent constancy that so astonishes you. Who would not love a modest, simple woman, who is ignorant of her own goodness, who sees nothing of her own merits, and always imagines that she is tolerated and excused? What a happiness is it for the man to deny this; and who would not feel the necessity of constantly reassuring her?

"What do you regret? The beauty of complexion and feature that you received by the chance of birth, like a reflection from your mother—the happy accident of that period through which we all pass? But the rare and peculiar beauty that you possess in yourself, your visible soul, you have created by a pure life, a noble

and unbroken harmony. It is the light of love, like the soft and faithful lamp, in transparent alabaster, which watches over us by night."

---

When will man learn that he is his own sculptor? It is his task to make himself beautiful. Socr tes was born as ugly as a satyr; but by his deep thought, by the sculpture of reason, virtue, and self-sacrifice, he so reconstructed his face, that at last a god saw himself therein, and the Phaedon shone with him.

I have seen a second instance of this phenomenon in one of my most illustrious friends, the first linguist of this century. When a boy, he had all the mean ugliness of a little Norman peasant; but his powerful will, his immense labor and ingenious research, traced in his face lines of exquisite delicacy. All Persian refinements hovered about his lips with the subtle turns of Western criticism, while the genius of India expanded itself in the luminous beauty of his grand forehead, capacious enough to hold the world.

Madame, permit me to tell you frankly that you were only pretty, you were not beautiful at first, but you are now. And why? Because you have loved.

Others allow themselves to be loved; but you have loved, and always sculptured your love in kindness, purity, fidelity, and sacrifice. In return, it has made you beautiful.

The best of us, both men and women, are born with a certain fresh and rugged vigor, if I may so express it, or else with a something of dryness and barrenness. Children, through ignorance or otherwise, are cruel in their nature. Young people of both sexes, if they are

not cruel, are at least colder-hearted than they themselves believe. Desire to them seems love. The ardor of the blood and of the temperament they call tenderness. But ever their rude, abrupt, violent deportment, their frivolous or ironical speeches, their vain or contemptuous expressions of countenance give the lie to all grace, and say plainly: "The heart is not yet touched."

Time, trials, sorrows bravely endured, and love, faithful love, are required to give grace of heart, and what is its exact equivalent, grace of speech and ways, in gesture and in bearing.

This is the true, the charming youth, which, however, begins late.

You were not young, Madame; but you are going to become so.

---

It has been scarcely observed, I think, that a number of pretty and graceful—hence youthful—things are impossible to youth.

The young girl, a semi-captive, captive to a single thought, awaiting a change of situation, thinks but of love and marriage—that is to say, of herself; she has neither the sentiment nor the grace of charity. As a young wife, while nursing her children, or at least assiduous in her attentions to them, all her mind is in the cradle; and if she gives to the poor, she says: "Pray for my son."

To her whose heart is more free from this concentration, every suffering creature is as her own child. She is radiant with kindness and active charity. She curtails all her expenses to be able to dispense free hospitality in her house; and at her simple but abundant table

she would like to seat all the kingdom of God. She goes out in search of the poor, gives them money, and best of all, comforts them. She weeps with those who are in affliction. And then how beautiful she is! How I should like to kiss her hands!

Her husband frequently catches her in the very act of charity. A convalescent invalid, or a woman recovered from confinement, enters accidentally and betrays her secret. She is embarrassed—their *mal-à-propos* benedictions disclosing her concealed goodness, that bashfulness of charity which dared not confess its weakness. He smiles and says: “Ah! so I have caught you at it again, have I!”

Some day he finds her blushing. Why? A young servant girl has committed a fault, and the wife, fearing that she will be too severely scolded, tacitly intercedes for her with a supplicating look.

But the occasion on which every man would be captivated by her, is when, surrounded by a party of young people of both sexes, she makes such kind and skilful exertions to set off the young girls to the best advantage. She draws something graceful out of these poor, dumb things, emancipating them by a sign or an apt word. She is very far from being jealous. She loves them, and by her own love evokes love from hearts which would have been the last to be roused. The one who is too timid to either move or speak, she draws towards her, makes a sort of pet dove of her, embraces and kisses her. Then that young creature appears charming. . . . And as for the wife, heaven is in her eyes!

## VI

## IS UNITY SECURED?

We have brought to light something which had not previously been felt:

That the advance of time, the succession of years, which was thought to be fatal to love, is its natural and necessary development; each additional year strengthens it, and after its manner, confirms and secures the bond, sustains and strengthens it. It was but a gossamer before, but in the end it becomes a cable that will defy a tempest.

---

Love has then won the victory. Time is his servant, and works for him. We may then close up this book.

No, not yet. The last difficulty is now to be approached. It is that this conqueror of conquerors has nevertheless an obstacle to encounter—in himself.

An insurmountable obstacle perhaps, since it is in the very essence of love.

How shall we unite if we are one? To unite *we must remain two*.

As long as life lasts, in the completest union, there will be necessarily a shade of separation. *She* will always be a woman, and she will be loved the more on that account. She will have, however thoughtful she may be, approaches to childish innocence; and for these she will be adored.

She would suppress this distinction entirely. I see



her (and it is a touching sight) examining herself, asking herself what more she can do to please him, to agree still better with him, to form a closer union with him? There is but one obstacle to this: she is a woman.

There will always be a difference between them—a difference which is diminished by age, by the will, and by increase of love, but has nevertheless not yet disappeared.

Woman is beauty—much tenderness, a little weakness, modesty, timidity, changefulness, a confiding trust in the future, innumerable delightful turns (of style and movement as well as of form); in short, she is all beauty and grace. All this is the very opposite to that right line of precision and strict justice which is the proper walk of man.

Woman is always either above or below justice. Of love, holiness, chivalry, magnanimity, and honor, she has a marvellous appreciation; but for law, that comes last of all.

Nevertheless, law and justice are the sovereign principles of modern life; exalted and complete principles too; for impartial and kind justice (as justice ought to be, to be justice at all) has the effect of love—that loftier love which embraces the community.

If woman, in former times, ever rose to an appreciation of this, it was by an extraordinary effort. As her great mission here below is to bring forth children, to incarnate individuals, she takes everything individually, and nothing by masses. Woman's charity consists in bestowing alms upon whoever asks—in giving bread to the hungry; and man's charity in those laws which assure to all the action of all their powers; which make

all men free and strong, capable of providing for themselves, and living with dignity.

---

Let us look into details. Let us see how slowly woman enters into the spirit of the age.

Whose heart is more tender than that of a woman? Her kindness embraces all nature. Everything that suffers and is weak, among men or animals, is loved and protected by her. Her gentleness towards her servants is extreme; and—what is new, and not of former times—she never utters a command without giving her reason for it, an explanation, with a touching consideration which I may call the modesty of equality. But her natural equals, whom she does not have to protect, who never ask more than simple justice, are less agreeable to her. Her delicacy, not aristocratic, but that which every refined and elegant woman has, suffers from their rude contact. The great word of this new age, "Fraternity," she spells, but cannot yet read.

She seems at times above the other virtues of our age: She is more than just—chivalrous, and profusely generous. But justice, carried to excess, is no longer justice.

Her husband, who usually tells her everything, has been very agitated—has passed a sleepless night, and hesitates to disclose the cause of his uneasiness. There are, in our struggling lives, many harsh and painful things of which we are tempted to spare woman the sad knowledge. She is all love, gentleness, and thankfulness. You can tell her of the love of the good; but how of the hatred of the bad?—the hostile necessities of justice and honor? the sacred wrath of justice? It would make her heart ache to tell her all that.

This silence never alarms her. She is patient all night, hoping and waiting. At last, when morning comes, taking his hand in hers, she cautiously asks if he is not ill. He speaks out then, and no longer conceals the struggle he has undergone, the moral duel to which he is now challenged. He is compelled, this morning, either to ruin a competitor or succumb himself. He has a deadly weapon in reserve for his adversary—a secret, the revelation of which will effectually decide the matter between them. He can put this man down, and it is his duty to do so; for he is a factious man, an enemy to the public good.

"Yes, but he is your enemy," she answers. "That is what deterred me," he says. "And yet what can I do? If I sacrifice myself, I also disregard law and justice."

"Ah! my love, how I regret that I am no longer young and beautiful, no longer what I was that morning when I had the happiness to conceive a child from you. I love you so much! Alas! why have I not the same power over you! I swear to you that I would have clasped you so tightly, guarded you so closely, that you would never have been able to go out this morning."

"What would you have me do? In an hour all must be decided. By my absence I lose everything. I condemn myself. I yield the victory to injustice."

"But you are sparing your enemy. Be noble and good, for my sake. Make this beautiful sacrifice for me, and I will still believe myself young."

He is touched. She is so humble, so charming in her modesty and generosity! She who never asked anything for her own sake, is now all self-forgetful and self-sacri-

ficing, for the first time asking a favor. It is hard to refuse, to be unable to prove to her how much you sympathize with her feelings, how you respect and love her. She weeps and seems mortified. This is too strong a temptation. Yet justice claims him—his country, and the right.

O Love! Love! you do not yet know what justice is!

---

VII.

DEATH AND AFFLICTION.

As age advances, my thought, journeying on, a persevering traveller, through life and history, has at last reached the summits of two hills, where it gladly rests, and whence it can see all the world. These hills are Death and Love.

From these two, the earth seems a very little thing. Its extent is as nothing; and even the duration and the difference of ages grow dim. Our ignorance causes us to exaggerate all diversities. From this elevated seat, under different costumes I see the eternal man.

This does not deter me from descending to the plain beneath, and reaping my harvest on the fields of History and Natural History. But I do like the Swiss. In winter I work below; when my work is done, I ascend again to those solitary summits which console

me, by permitting me to embrace, in a grand simplicity, all the seeming combats of things, and to recognise the profound harmony in all that seems discordant.

---

This book set out from death, to which it now returns.

In the first pages we saw it; there death, violent death, revealed to us woman (and through her love) in the organic mystery from which everything proceeds.

Death, the invisible yet ever-present companion of this book, has appeared but twice in it, and both times without striking a blow. And this has sufficed to tighten the bond of love, with a nervous strength that it never had before. Death threatened to appear in the drama of Confinement. It again showed itself on the dark day of Illness; and such is its potent charm in uniting hearts, that, at its second appearance, an everlasting jet of flame burst forth; and this I called the *Rejuvenescence of Love*.

But Death is not done yet. It contends that Life, which is believed to be the sole condition and the means of being, yet prevents the existence of certain other things. It asserts that if there still remain a distinction between the two souls—if the woman remain ever devoted to Grace, and the man to Justice, without the possibility of blending, it is the fault of Life. Death says that it alone can remove this last difference, and that Love, which is unable to do away with it, will obtain through his sombre sister the effectual union.

---

Well, Death, if it must be so, I ought not to object. I cannot defend these two children of my brain against you, though I have created, nourished, caressed, united,

and counselled them for the twenty years that I was meditating this book of Love, and the two years that I have been writing it; I have loved them, I regret to part from them. But what can I do, if it is Life itself which prevents Love from attaining its consummation?

---

It is for the man to die and for the woman to mourn.

So we generally see it. The feeble woman, from grief to grief, from tears to tears, lives on, and is left a widow.

It is beautiful in man to die in his strength, to die young, at least in full vigor. He is so much the more regretted. Let us not pity him, but her.

If the man should survive, being occupied and diverted by work, he would perhaps feel this great affliction less, or at least not for so long a time. But for her—alas! how deep will Death's shaft strike! We hardly dare to think of that.

---

I remember, as if it were yesterday, that, on the day after my grandfather was buried, it having rained that night, my grandmother said, in a tone which brings the tears to my eyes, for all these forty years: "Mon Dieu! it is raining on him!"

We cannot change that; it is the voice of nature. That will be said over and over again, by all men and all women—perhaps whispered, and inwardly stifled—but thought certainly.

When we are cool, and love but little, we are more exalted and prouder. We have no idea of burying our heart in the grave. We imagine beautiful wings for it. But when the anguish of bereavement really holds us in

its clutches, takes us by the throat as it were, it becomes invincible, and we say "It is raining on him!"

Is this a simple vesture, a garment, as it is said to be? This body which day by day received the alluvium of life, which in its indestructible bones bears traces of all its activity and passion, which for a thousand years will retain those admired teeth, that living silk of hair which you have so often caressed—all is so blended with the creature herself that his heart is to be pardoned for confounding them, for seeing in them her who is no longer there, for saying, "It is raining on her."

---

It is December. A cold sun lights up the frost with which the fields are whitened. The house, once noisy, now silent, shivers in the winter blast. The fireplace, which formerly shed its light upon the complete family circle, now desolate itself, hardly serves to warm the widow who crouches over it. In a corner of the room two chairs wait—and will wait for ever: the arm-chair which, as he entered, he drew up to her side, to talk over the events of the day, and his projects for the morrow—and near it, the little low chair in which the child slipped between father and mother, and, interrupting them with his prattle, forced them to smile.

Of her what remains? a shadow. Her beautiful hair, now arranged in white bands, covers her thin temples. She is yet elegant, and looks even grand, with her still young and slender form, as she walks with downcast eyes through the deserted rooms. She no longer recalls the charming face, the eyes which once unsettled hearts, and were for one faithful heart a destiny; she conceals

all that she can conceal of them. But, nevertheless, two things remain which the young would envy her. One is the admirable attribute of purity which God grants as a consolation to the innocent woman who passes through life without touching it. The complexion in which no trouble is ever visible, gains in transparency ; it passes from the rosiness of youth to a rosy pearliness, with delicate shadings.

The other attribute which adorns our widow in spite of herself, which even lends her perhaps, under her mourning and her black veil, a mysterious éclat that was wanting in her days of triumph, is her gentle yet penetrating look. The eye is the true beauty, the lasting beauty which time itself is forced to respect, age even to augment. Trials and sufferings may have impaired the rest ; but the eye, like the heart, is embellished by suffering.

She leaves the half-extinguished fire, and, approaching the window, happy to see the close of day, looks out upon the dreariness of winter, with her hands clasped over her heart, to whose voice she listens. Soon the northern sky is studded with bright stars. Death, Old Age, Winter, which, in these bright nights, sharpens his piercing shafts—all these combine against the poor heart and chill its everlasting flame.

“The world, youth, and distinction,” she says, “were but partial slumbers, troubled dreams, from which my love never derived its clearness. Now, all thine, I watch !”

---



## VIII.

### OF LOVE BEYOND THE GRAVE.

BUT, dear one, this is watching and weeping too long. The light of the stars grows dim, and in a moment it will be morning. Take some repose now. Your other half, whose absence so afflicts you, and whom you seek in vain in your empty rooms and in your widow's couch, will talk to you in your dreams :

“ Oh ! how much I had to say ! and how little, while alive, did I say ! At the first word, God took me away from you. I had hardly time enough to say : I LOVE. To pour out my heart to you I require eternity.

“ A sweet concert, sanctifying earth, had commenced between us. Of our double heart the celestial harmonist had just made a divine instrument ; he was playing the prelude. If the string has snapped, if death, which seems to us such a shrieking discord, has hushed this lyre, do not think, my love, that it is hushed for ever, nor that God has thrown it aside. No, the hymn is suspended, to be resumed in a more sonorous sphere, in sovereign liberty, enfranchised from this lower world.

“ You know, not a morsel, not an atom of the body in which my soul was clothed, is lost. Of the elements which constituted it, each one will surely find its fellow, and return to its affinities. How much more then should the soul itself, the harmonic power which constituted the unity of this body, survive and last ! It does survive, but as one. Unity is its nature. It remains, and is

### 314      Of Love beyond the Grave.

more and more what it was, a centre of attraction. All that revolved about it in its first life, by the analogies of nature, and the assimilation of love, irresistibly returns to it. I am incomplete, and await you; the need of union that my soul carried away with it, makes it ever aspire towards the possession of its dearest half, which your world still keeps from it.

---

"It had to be thus. Recall to your mind our torments of love—the effort, always made but never satisfied, to interchange our souls—the impotence of pleasure even, the trace of melancholy in our happiness. Words, looks, and the most ardent transports, still left a barrier between us. What it was we knew not. The heart always said: "By and by," and "That is not it." In *generation* even, where Nature herself pauses, Love went on. Its natural regret was that, itself proceeding from light, being the sole and exclusive love of the beloved object, it should so soon be blinded and left in utter darkness, that in this profound obscuring personality should disappear and be swallowed up; that in her it no longer knew at that moment, it was she. . . . Hence came sadness, and doubt, and the bitterness of saying: "What is this thing, always incomplete and uncertain, which only attains its *desire* by undefining it, by losing all idea of it?—In this impulse of soul to soul, all has vanished; and I cannot tell whether the union was a union, or a momentary death, in a flash of pleasure.

"So that with these burning transports an unexpected third was mingled—the idea of death. Not frightful, but melancholy, and not without a certain charm. Death said: 'Fear not, but hope. A false death has made you

feel that you will progress but little here below. It is elsewhere, it is by me and through my deliverance that, ascending the ladder of luminous worlds, yourselves participating in the freedom of light, you may penetrate each other, and, without losing for a moment the clearness of love, blend together in one emanation of light !'

---

"We will ascend thus. But by what means, and at what cost? Seek the simplest means, and it will be that of God. For, though human art gropes its way by complicated and painful circuits, that of God goes on the straight road, quickly and easily. Mentally, as physically, like seeks like, and instinctively they come together. Otherwise infinite strength would be lost in dispersion. This machine of the universe—so visibly harmonic in palpable things, would be in things invisible just the opposite—a discordance, far beneath the failures of the most unskilful of workmen.

"Did we on earth obtain an assimilation and a perfect resemblance? Our essays thereto were vain. The blindness of my desire, the abandonment of your sacrifice, bringing us always back to the same effort, left beyond our reach a hundred accessible doors of the soul by which we might have joined each other. You knew but a single man in me; and yet I contained several. The quiet of widowhood, and the strength of your memory, will bring them back to you gradually, and in the world of a soul which belongs to you, which is always your property, you will make more than one happy discovery. Gather up this strength and these thoughts, which were myself. Taken into your heart

and brooded over by your love, they will be to you as a new impregnation, got from the world of spirits.

"I suffer at seeing you suffer. But yet you must not recover. Such a posthumous assimilation as ours is only effected by pain, a bleeding wound. This wound will swallow up my soul, and, fusion thus effected, you can no longer remain down there. An irresistible attraction, taking you some morning, there where your heart is not, will bring you, like an arrow, here where it is, where I am. It will be no more difficult than it is for a spring, which has been kept down by a heavy weight, the weight removed, to rebound and leap up again, returning to its nature. Now, I am your nature and your natural life; the obstacle removed, you return to me.

"This obstacle is the difference which is still between us. Oh! I implore you, become myself, and you will be mine entirely!

"Sorrow is all your present existence. I would have you filled with an active sorrow. Do not remain seated at that cold marble sepulchre. Wear a great affliction, really worthy of me, with noble tears, which should enlarge all hearts.

"I see those poor creatures, my friends, distracted, not feeling my spirit among them. I see the lost flock running wildly away, as if I were really in the tomb. Your work be it not to permit them to despair or forget. Yours the duty to say: 'He still lives!'

"If you affirm this, they will believe it. My house, which was their house, will call them back and maintain their fraternity. In their uncertainties, and painful fluctuations, they will wish to see my hearth again, to warm themselves by its fire: that fire burns in you.

"There you will preserve my soul, and perhaps extend its dominion. Through you it will vegetate and put forth new roots. More than one whom I could not gain over, in the roughness of my masculine manners, may come to me when he finds me under the touching figure of a woman, beautiful in her sorrow and her hope.

"This circle of friendships, which was my glory, has in you its unity, the flame which will prolong my life to it. Keep this loved group together; maintain among them so thoroughly my thought, that, assimilated to me, I may see you some day all arriving together in my new sojourn—that I may see you again as formerly, when young and so charming, as you entered the room and cut short my work, saying with your dawn-like smile: 'Be joyful, for here are your friends!'

---

Such the widow, and such the widowhood. It is the delayed soul of the husband, who, in his faithful half, still manifests himself here, and, as memory and presentiment, affects the transition between two worlds.

A great and sacred position this, to have one foot already in the higher path, ready and eager to ascend towards the superior life! So, in approaching this woman, we all perceive a sacred thing in her, the gentle influence of the dead, who have no battles here on earth, and only wish to do here what good they can. I should like to dwell on this; this priesthood of the widow is a touching feature in the Religion of the Future. But enough for the present.

So I do not follow her in those friendships of the past of which she forms the connecting bond, nor in those

## 318      Of Love beyond the Grave.

new friendships that she makes with the one who is more, in transmitting his soul under that form of maternal love which is called instruction.

If the husband has left no works to answer for him, simply acts which are still discussed, if he had especially worn out his days in the struggles of public life, then, then above all, will he require to have his other and surviving self watch over his memory, to preserve and defend it from misconception, to secure to him the heart of posterity, a resurrection of glory.

This always comes to whosoever awaits it in the person of a patient watcher. Some morning a light breaks; and the widow, long thrust into the shade, as if buried with him, sees (as saw the Seven Sleepers of the legend) the banner he had followed, hung out upon the walls of the temples, bright and clear in the splendor of the dawn.

And she has then, in her old age, the charming surprise of hearing people say, as if HE were still alive: "This is a just man!"

From all sides, children, whom he did not know, come to her, all claiming such a father. They regret that they are young, because they could not see him. They interrogate curiously her who had the happiness of being an eye-witness of his life. Lo! he is already one of the ancients. She sees him receiving the homage of posterity.

Such is the effect of the legend, his memory, upon all. How much more, then, upon her who has beheld so near, loved, touched the lamented object, and who now sees him through the vistas of tradition, transfigured with light!

The shrine of the departed just remains for new

generations, an object of religion. No youth approaches it without honoring the widow. He finds a pleasing woman, who is far from recalling the long ago from which the legend comes. What preserves this grace, is the love that fills her heart, her kindness towards all, her gentle resignation, her sympathy with the young and her wishes for their happiness.

She is still beautiful in her loye, and beautiful in the broad shade which adorns and enfolds her. More than one, at twenty, sorry to have been born so late, returns to her in spite of himself, and leaves her with regret, cursing time, which delights in separating us thus, and saying from the bottom of his heart: "O woman, whom I could have loved!"

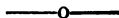




## NOTES AND EXPLANATIONS.



## NOTES AND EXPLANATIONS.



1. *What Love has been* in ancient and modern society.

2. *What it might be now*, in our present condition, taking *it* as a means of moral reform, which alone can render social reforms possible.

3. Finally, *what it will become*, in a world of justice and intelligence, such as we some day shall have.

Such is the subject in its completeness. At present I deal with the *second* part only.

The first and the third are necessarily complicated by an endless number of religious, social, and political questions, which I must postpone.

The second part, which I give, is *love in itself*, concentrated on what appears an individual object; love followed in a progress usually deemed solitary. But nothing in morals is thus isolated.

Here it creates the home, and creates it solidly, because it makes of it a living, expanding, and progressive thing. The fire dies out if it is left alone; the tree dies if it does not vegetate.

Proceeding in its true spirit, free from the vain agitation which enervates and renders it barren, Love will have that natural progress which it so often has had, that powerful radiation from which so often, in history, societies have sprung.

---

My peculiar regret in leaving this book so brief and imperfect, is that I have not been able this time to develop the chapters which might rightly be called those on *culture and education*, or moral discipline, those being substantially practical chapters, into which I have put

(according to my limited capability) the germs of a new art—new, but how necessary! For the family nowadays, being so little upheld by the Church and the community, is each day obliged to ask of Love the allotment of its moral life, to draw continually from its profound depths.

How can we talk to woman at the sacred moments which precede and follow marriage? How can we take her always in those hours of perfect faith when she listens, and believes everything beforehand? And how, also, may we call her back when, long after, her heart wavers, when, weary and sad, it lies at the mercy of caprice? This is what I should have wished to develop at length.

In the chapters on *Foundation* and *Moral Incubation*, I should have wished to give some examples of the true culture of love. I have at least marked a very essential point, where the education of woman is distinguished from our own by the necessity of observing the rhythm of her life, and the manner in which nature measures out her time.

In the chapters on *Temptation* and *Medication of the Heart*, I would have multiplied the often very simple recipes by which love is diverted from its course, evaded or cured. Oftenest the beloved object counts for but little in the passion; it is the occasion which does everything: the person who loves has need of loving. She is but slightly smitten, perhaps in love with love itself. The love of a child, the love of an idea, of a new place, of a serious affair, would suffice to calm it. Often, too, a woman who has seen but little of life becomes prejudiced in favor of a man of inferior merit of whom she constructs an ideal. Her good sense would return to her if you should bring her face to face with true superiority. One who was infatuated with a brilliant provincial talker needed nothing more, to cure her, than to go and see Béranger.

Again: I should have wished to develop those main and important chapters where the woman, having obtained all her legitimate ascendancy, being a tender loving wife, is also like a young mother to the man, regulating and repairing his expenditure of life; often calming his blind fury, often restoring him his brilliancy of mind; at one time imparting pleasure, at another power, but always—always happiness. (Book V chapters ii. and iii.)

It is here that the agreement of the moral and physiological sciences

will create the most fertile of all arts, diametrically opposed to the morbid influence of the old casuistic laws — *the art of vivifying by love*.

We have paused on the threshold of this delicate subject, although we know very well that the hypocritical modesty which has here drawn the curtain and left all to caprice, has purified nothing, rendered nothing more moral than before. In relinquishing the task of informing us as to the internal affinities of marriage, it has made of it the obscure sphere of a prosaic physical life, which men have thought they could safely despise. It has been decided that love is nothing but enervation, not knowing that in it resides the stimulus to infinite strength.

Not long ago a brilliant surgeon, the oracle of students, was lecturing them, in accordance with the doctrines of a great and harsh master, on the inferiority of woman and the royalty of man, the vanity of love, etc. He thought to emancipate them, and make them despise pleasure. An illustrious physiologist, a friend of mine, who was present, said to him: "Take care, sir! take care! They will adopt the brutality of love with only too great facility; but not its gravity, not the masculine tenderness which it conceals in the heart of the family. They will not understand this bitter censor, who would strike too hard to produce an impression. I tell you, as a physician, that this contemptuous talk about women is very dangerous; it does not induce abstinence; on the contrary, it makes the man wander wretchedly about, and leads him straight into enervation."

To return to the gaps in this book. I should have wished to guide the woman in the interior culture that she can give herself. Her husband, who upheld her when she was young—later, in the press of business, and in the cares of life, returns home at night fatigued, and often disheartened. But it is her task to create in her own heart that paradise wherein revivifying sources will abound to reanimate him. She will find this in her love, in the innocent voices of Nature, which translate to her God's word. "A Rose for a Counsellor" is a great deal. I should have liked to let that rose speak often, for a long time, continually. It has much to say to the woman of these days. And the latter can readily understand it, being herself so delicate in heart and ear.

That great adept in harmony, Nature, in the name of God, will advise either the woman or the flower to harmonize with the strong stalk which supports her, and not to bloom by herself. And of what use would it be to shine separately for a few moments in the peril of a bouquet? This stem must not be disdained. Neither disdain this man. If he is not the contemplative genius of a past age, if he is not the handsome warrior, the hero of antiquity, remember, my dear girl, that to offset this, he has one very superior aspect—he is the strong workman, he is the powerful creator of an immense world of science, of industry, and of riches, which yesterday arose from his energy and activity. He has changed all things. By the side of Nature, he has built another nature, of his genius and his strength. You lollers (we must say it of the richer classes), you beautiful indolence, look on and enjoy this.

“But how can that be? My husband is a merchant, a tradesman, a workman.” Then he is a creator of riches. “A writer? a painter?” A creator in works of art. And you may go as low as you please; for all trade is art nowadays.

This universal effort, ideas, works, and productions, piling rapidly one above the other, all rise up to an enormous height. “Such means are prosaic,” you say. But the result is so grand! Your husband, the man of modern times, found nothing done, and has done everything. If our fathers could return to earth, they would be frightened, and go down on their knees before their terrible sons. Look upon this martyr of labor with respect, with love, and with pity also. Do not be so puerile as to observe a little dust which your glorious Prometheus may have on his garments. Look at that pale forehead. In the aureole which irradiates it you see the sweat stand out, often a sweat of blood.

He, also, has a duty. It is not to let himself be so carried away in the fury of work that he shall be swallowed up in it, that he shall see but his own narrow road, and nothing but its details. There are no little things, I know. To succeed, minutiae are necessary; without this, without precision, no result is possible. But the workman must remain greater than his work; he must prevail over it. It can only be strongly embraced when he is above it. If he retains the highest thought of it, he will have in that, day by day, a power over the woman, a hold upon her which he will never lose. She is faithful and loving

to whosoever is great and strong. Now, in the lowest occupation, he who feels the life thereof, its affinities with art, reveals himself with grandeur.

I might have written more in this quiet retreat of Pornic, before this tranquil sea, which sympathized with this book, and whose deep rhymes have served it as an accompaniment. But here is a little girl—six or seven years old, I should judge—who unwittingly warns me that I have done enough. On the beach they were drawing sea water in buckets for bathing purposes. The child, a fisherman's daughter, stopped in her play to look on. "What are you thinking about?" I asked. "Sir," she answered, "the sea is a very strange thing. You may keep taking out as much as you please, but it always stays just as full."

This is just what I was thinking at that very moment, but of an other sea.

I have drawn what I could from this subject, bottomless and shoreless; but it is never exhausted.

My historical materials would make two volumes. My physiological notes one, or more. I cannot tell how many it would take to give even the extracts, the letters, the revelations and the actual facts by which I have profited.

This little sea, drawn from the great ocean of Love, sufficed to drown me. I was submerged in the multitude of my notes. I shall put them off now, and content myself with these.

---

#### NOTE 1.

##### A GLANCE AT THE ENSEMBLE OF THIS BOOK.

IF towards the close of this volume we have not completely lost sight of the beginning, we should remember one of love's singularities that at each of its stages it has imagined itself at the end, and thought itself sure of the infinite. Then every one laughed and said it was mad.

Not so much so as it seemed. Several times has it occupied and mastered the everlastingness of the soul, but, you will understand, of the

soul as it could only be at that time, in the narrow limits in which it is at first contained.

When love's flower, at twenty, said so impulsively, "I give myself up to you, take me entirely!" it was not a lie; but what did she give; as yet but little. She gave what she had, not what she still lacked (Book II.)

When foundation impregnated her so profoundly and changed her being; when a blood and silken down, which came to deck her lip, revealed her transformation; when her voice, gait, and so many involuntary signs seemed to say, "*He is all in me*," undoubtedly the consummation was attained. Attained, yes, inevitably; not the free consummation of the soul. (Book III.)

But, finally, the cravings of this imperfect liberty, which capriciously protested, having conquered themselves, the momentary disagreement of the mental and physical maladies (Book IV.) having given way to harmony, the two souls found themselves in the most loving unity they had ever yet obtained. With a more effusive joy, Love triumphed this time, and said to itself, "I possess the infinite."

One thing, which woman only really attains in her second youth, was wanting: that by an effort of the heart she should leave behind her the passive state in which she nearly always lived, to take upon her activity and movement, to make herself *him*; not by the dull fatality of impregnation, but by active will, by love (Book V.). Until then, work separated them, and the woman had her own hours; now all hours of the day and night are hers. In everything he feels that she is useful and charming, he cannot get on without her. She is the cherished young companion in whom he finds seriousness, pleasure, whatsoever he wills, ever ready to transform itself for him. She is his Viola, his Rosalind, a loving friend in the morning, a wife in the evening, an angel at all times.

Though obedient, she has, if need be, the upper hand; she knows how to plan and to act. And, when the man, either in business or thought, is weak and hesitates, in the agitated night especially, when his troubled soul seeks and finds nothing, and seems as though bewildered, she is there and smiles. The evil enchantment disappearing, he laughs at himself. A kiss restores to him his wings.

Have we not here obtained what we sought, the absolute interchange of being? Has not love now attained the infinite? Now that the



feeble woman has received, so completely taken, the soul of man, that she can, if necessary, give it back to him, and that in the failure of his manly genius she gives him what she has not, the generating spark—does not this seem the miracle of unity?

No, this may still be intensified one degree more: when both their minds meet in a kindly project, when both are softened by the surprise of finding that they have the same heart to such a degree, when love and pity blended melt in silent tears; this is the moment of fusion, when invincible love triumphs, when the soul renews its sense, when, often more ardently than in youth, returns the incentive to desire.

What a great thing is goodness! Everything else is secondary to it; grace, wit, intelligence, are worth nothing when not accompanied by it. Even alone, it is all-powerful. It is not a rare thing for a man to desire a woman because she is good, and for no other reason. Profound harmony of our being! It goes by the senses to the heart; it tends, by physical union, to attain and possess the moral suavity which is there. God is felt in it. This is why we wish to be united.

Love is a thing of the brain. All desire was first an idea.

Often a very confused idea—an idea that a state of the body (heat, intoxication, plethora) has seconded and inflamed, but not preceded. Of the two extremities of nervous life, the inferior one, that of sex, has little initiative power. It awaits the sign from above.

Recall your souvenirs. In the pleasure which seemed to you altogether instinctive, and not at all a matter of forethought, you will find, by thinking it over, that an occasion, an incident, or some new circumstance had previously awakened the mind.

If the circumstance was piquant, the idea new and lively, then your pleasure was great.

The renewing of desire is rendered inexhaustible by the fertility of the mind, the originality of ideas, the art of seeing and finding new mental aspects—in short, by the *optics of love*.

The simple changing of surroundings, climate, habitation, often suffices to change everything. The man who wearies of his wife in the lowlands, would love her on the Alps. Rousseau says that he was made virtuous by the sight of the Pont du Gard. And such a man would feel himself in love again at seeing the Lago Maggiore, Coliseum, or Vesuvius. This is no pleasantry. Do better. Transport these wearied ones to America: put them where a foreign language is spoken,

amid new manners and customs, on the borders of the great forests; they will find it very nice to be together, to be to each other both native land and universe. The dear wife of his youth will find herself young again, desired as on the first day, and fruitful; she will be so without doubt. In the new world, new loves.

How much more vigorously would love be awakened, if to one or the other of the married pair there should come one of those joys of the mind which so add to beauty!—a heroic act, a triumph of opinion, anything for example. One of my friends, whose plays are very successful, finds at home, at each success, a recompense—he sees himself very much beloved. He who performs a noble, daring act, who saves a life, let us suppose, by risking his own, is never an old husband to his wife, but always a young lover. Love, in these circumstances, acquires immense strength, becomes a torrent of poetic life, which had never been looked for.

---

#### NOTE 2.

##### IS THE AUTHOR EXCUSABLE FOR BELIEVING THAT WE CAN STILL LOVE?

As I have said, the subject of this book has recurred to me on many occasions: in 1936 through history; in 1844 through my sympathy for those young people whose life is a suicide; in 1849 through social tumults. I felt that *here* was the evil and the remedy. My discouraged mind brought up the public morals against me, and asked: "What is the use?"

Yet the terrible official statistics, of undoubted accuracy, which came to me at times, seemed to sound in my ears like a funeral knell—that the race even, the physical basis of this people, was compromised. For instance, the young men unfit for military service, dwarfed, hump-backed, lame, in the seven years, 1831—1837, numbered only 460,000, and in the following seven years they increased 31,000, etc. Marriages have diminished to a fearful degree, in certain years; in 1851 *nine thousand less* than in the year preceding; in 1852 *seven thousand less* than in 1851 (that is 16,000 less than in 1850), etc. The official statistics

of 1866 show that the population is diminishing or remains stationary. Widowers marry again, but widows do not. Add the enormous number of women who have committed suicide, or died miserably. As to the Morgue, see the *Annals of Hygiene and Forensic Medicine*, vols. II., VII., XVII., XLIV., XLV., XLVI., XLVIII., L., and VII. of the second series.

Neither do I see that the rest of Europe is less diseased than France.

Mark, that the life of Europe, so far, is the life of the world. If it dies, the world dies. America, flooded from Ireland, and by a hundred troublous elements, is urged on, by her adopted barbarity, to the conquest of the Catholic and uncivilized world, which threatens to destroy whatever youth she still retains, and to blast the hope of possible rejuvenescence that she might offer to the rest of the human race.

I know that Europe has already undergone a sort of eclipse in the fall of the Roman Empire. But the situation was different, and even opposite in one point. That political event was preceded by an extraordinary enfeeblement of the mind. Now, on the contrary, the progress of inventive genius, accelerated in the last three centuries (which have done the work of ten thousand years), is in a brilliant *crescendo*. The miracle of miracles is not far from being accomplished; and truly, the greatest event that has occurred on this planet is that through the electric wire, becoming conscious of thought, the planet every moment obtains a sort of identity and personality.

Whence come these miraculous applications? They are things sent down to us from the lofty tower reared by all the sciences. Babel? No, but a marvellous harmony. The short-sighted man calls it Babel, because when he has one stone under his eye, he does not see the next one, far less the whole edifice. But the sublime and master structure may laugh at that, for its base is in Mathematics and its head in the Milky Way!

An incalculable power is this, not of intelligence only, but of life and its force. There can be no intellectual truth which does not bear upon actions.

In this great enlightenment, how can you die—with this, with such a perfect knowledge of the world and of yourself? When the Roman empire foundered, it went down in utter darkness. Before death, came night.

If the moral sense has declined, it is not a failure of the mind. The

organ is not directly attacked, but it floats and fluctuates, through the enervation of the inferior organs. We have enormous strength, but it is sadly scattered and wasted.

This whole book has its end in this :

*Either concentrate yourself, or die.*—The concentration of the vital forces supposes, first of all, the stability of the home.

We must not despise ourselves, and idly fold our arms. If we do, all is lost.

We are corrupted, it is true ; but tainted water may again become good to drink. Our heroic fathers were not saints. The Idea, when it came, found them tramping about wofully in a bog. Now they look towards heaven, and inspired with the eternal beauty, they no longer know each other ; wings have sprung from their shoulders !

Are the people of to-day worth less, on the whole, than those of my childhood ? I see it to be the contrary. Of those former times there remains to me a sense of terrible barrenness. Who would support in these days the mortal dreariness of the *Martyrs* ? The Abbé Geoffroy, Messrs. De Jony, Baour held the reins of the press. No natural sentiment then. But few birds ; not a flower. I saw them appear one by one : the hydrangea at forty years of age, the dahlia at thirty, etc. Nowadays, every hut has a rose-bush at the door, every seventh-story garret a flower on its window sill. The flag-man on the railroad, who cannot leave his sentry-box, takes advantage of the time between two trains to make himself a garden.

In my sixty years of life, I have seen the commencement and growth of one of the most serious manifestations of the human soul—the religion of the dead, the adornment of the grave. I was twelve years old in 1810, and my memories of that time are very clear. I distinctly remember that a cemetery then was an Arabian desert, where hardly any one ever came. Now it is a garden full of monuments and flowers. The progress of wealth has undoubtedly much to do with this ; but so also has the progress of the heart. The cemetery is visited now ; even the poorest find means to carry to it garlands and souvenirs. At the easiest season of the year, the wife of the poorest workman economizes a few pence from the family bread in order to buy flowers for the dead.

Death is the sister of Love. These two religions are related—indestructible, eternal. And if Death live on, why may not Love also ?

I did not imagine, in the winter of 1856, that the cold public would hear a certain bird-song, an impatient robin-redbreast who flew away before the snow was fairly melted. But he was listened to. I then doubted that the noise of an ant-hill would be heard. But that also was listened to, and, some persons, they say, were much affected by it. How could this dark-working world of imperceptible creatures, having not the winged grace of the bird, make an impression? Because Love, which circulates in all things, was recognised there.

So I hoped on, *in spite of everything*. The excess even of evils gave me courage. Must not these follies and squanderings cease some time, through impotency at least? Ennui is also visible. Do the husband and wife gain anything by the practical divorce which is the custom nowadays? The wife, only too thoroughly feels the truth laid down by George Sand: "The lover is just as tiresome as the husband." On the other hand the poor husband does not reap complete enjoyment. There are no longer *filles de joie*; there are *filles de marbre* and women of sadness.

Besides, if *society* will not reform itself, there are thirty millions of French, a hundred or two hundred millions of Europeans, who are not at all in *society*, know nothing about the Bourse, nor fast balls, nor kept women. If there still remain two hundred millions of men to love, it will suffice.

Love cannot die. It will re-make everything. It will re-make you, young man of twenty-nine years (this is the marrying age in Paris), young man though already not old enough, already fatigued. You think of settling down, but you dare not, in fear of the ruinous course of life to-day. If you are a practical man, read this book. Whatever the style may be, you will find in it several very practical things. You need, in your struggles here on earth, in the quicksands of the world, an earnest partner. You will not find her ready made, but this book will teach you how to make her. The mother cannot know beforehand what the sphere of action of her married daughter will be, nor prepare her for it. Everything nowadays has become personal. Marriage varies infinitely, according to the husband. In certain occupations, the wife is a co-laborer with her husband, as, for instance—in trade. In others, as in the arts, she assists and inspires, *associates herself in his thought*. Finally, in the more laborious occupations, the lives of men

of action and of public affairs, she is the natural confidante, and the only possible supporter and consoler of the mind. If you do not neglect her, if you keep her conversant with your concerns, if you establish a complete communion with her, you will see how the person who in certain professions is considered useless, nevertheless brings thereto material force. In a world where everything is changing, you must have a fixed point on which you can rely for support. Now, this point is a home. The hearth is not a stone, as it is often called, it is a heart, and the heart of a woman.

---

NOTE 3.

WOMAN REINSTATED AND PROCLAIMED INNOCENT BY SCIENCE.

SCIENCE is mistress of the world. It reigns without ever needing to command. The Church and the Law have to inform themselves of its decrees, and reform themselves according to its teachings.

Now, heretofore, the greater part of religious and civil laws in regard to woman could be summed up in one sentence: "*She is considered a thing, and yet punished as a person.*"

*As the physiology, so the legislation.* The Legislative inconsistencies came originally from the senseless physiology of barbarous ages. They said at the same time: "Woman is an *impure thing*,—and a *responsible person*."

A thing *so impure*, that Moses pronounced death against the man who approached her at a certain period of the month.

A person *so responsible*, that her first fault sufficed to pervert forever the will of the human race.

Christianity follows Moses. All the old Fathers condemn her, and make her the servant of the man, who is the superior being, and relatively pure. Her last and most terrible enemy is the metaphysician, Saint Thomas, who reduces their thought to a formula; he goes so far as to say, that the woman, being an *accidental* and *defective* creature, ought not to have entered into the primal creation.

What a fearful proposition! God was mistaken, and made his work *defective*!

But, *defective* in what? Certainly not in beauty. They can bring forward nothing but the childish ideas of barbarians, about the physique. *She is impure.* Pope Innocent III. expressed it strongly: "*Offensive odors and uncleannesses always accompany her.*"

This doctrine is not yet abandoned. A physician of Lyons, a stubborn defender of all the errors of the Middle Ages, declares and prints, in 1858, "that the menstrual blood is impure."

Now, let us state the facts:

1. *The woman is as pure as the man.* Our first Chemists, Messrs. Bouchardat, Denis, and others, have analysed this blood and found it to be the same as elsewhere in the organization.

2. *Is the woman responsible?* Undoubtedly, she is a person; but she is a *sick* person, or, to state it more exactly, a person *wounded* every month, who suffers almost constantly from that wound and from its healing. This has been admirably proved by the ovologists (Baër, Négrier, Pouchet, Coste) between 1827 and 1847.

When an invalid is in question, if the law wishes to be just, it ought always to take into consideration, in every punishable act, this extenuating circumstance. To impose upon her the same punishment as upon the well person (I mean the man), is not an impartiality of justice, but a partiality and an injustice.

The law will modify itself, I have no doubt. But the first modification should take place in jurisprudence and legal practice. The magistrates will feel, as I have said, that, to decide and punish what there is *free* in the acts of woman, they must take into account the involuntariness which is associated therewith by illness. The continual presence of a medical jury in our courts of justice is indispensable. I have contended elsewhere that the death-punishment is wholly inapplicable to women. And there is hardly any article in the Code which can be applied to them without modification, especially when they are pregnant. A woman takes something which does not belong to her. What can you do? She has had an insurmountable *desire* for it. If you arrest her, you will do her a great injury. If you put her in prison, you will kill her. "Property is sacred," you say; I know it, because it is the fruit of labor. But there is in this case a superior *labor* which must be respected, and the fruit that she bears in her womb is the property of the human race. So that to have yours, which is perhaps worth two pence, back again

you are going to risk two murders! I would much rather save you, when the thing taken is worth but a trifle, permit yourself to be robbed with a good grace, and abstain from arresting her. The ancient German laws expressly permit her to take a little fruit, without being subject to arrest.

With these thoughts of humanity is connected what I have said about the union of the two branches of science, *the science of justice, the science of nature*. What is most wanting in these is the sense of their analogies. In many points they are one and the same. *Justice must become Medicine*, informing itself from the physiological sciences, appreciating the degree of fatality which is connected with free actions, in short curing, not to punish solely, but to cure. *Medicine must become Justice and Morality*. That is to say, that the physician, an intelligent judge of internal life, should enter into an examination of the moral causes which produce physical illness, and dare to go to the root of the evil, to reform the habits from which the malady proceeds. There is no malady which is not derived from our whole life. All attempts at cure are made in the dark, if not based upon a perfect knowledge of the patient, and his complete confession.

#### NOTE 4.

#### OF THE SOURCES OF THIS BOOK OF LOVE, AND OF THE SUPPORT THAT PHYSIOLOGY HEREIN LENDS MORALITY.

THE richest source from which I have drawn materials for this book, is, as I have said, the confidence with which my friends and many other persons have revealed to me their interior life. They were so sure of my sympathy that they often made me acquainted with more than one delicate particular which they concealed even from their own families. I have profited by everything, of course, without indicating anyone by too precise signs. But here, once for all, I can



assure the reader that the ground upon which he walks is solid, and based upon realities. Such and such a sentence, which might be taken as a bit of literary filling in, is, in reality, an anecdote or a fact from everyday life.

Nevertheless—these rich materials, so precious in the study of human morality, would have been of but little use to me, if I had not had for my advantage the sure starting point which physiology has recently given us. I have drawn largely upon the works of physicians, and their infinitely instructive verbal communications.

Not having this instruction, the literary men who have treated the same subject before me, have floated about at the mercy of chance, and said many vague and contradictory things.

It will be readily understood why I do not examine the more recent works, despite my esteem and respect for the genius of their authors. As for the more ancient, two works have occupied the public mind: the serious book of Senancour (the 1st and 2nd editions, not the 3rd); and the jesting one of Balzac. These books are in every way opposed to each other. The man of 1800 utters the severest condemnations against adultery. And the man of 1830 begins and ends his book with the well known phrase, "Adultery is merely the affair of a sofa." Balzac confesses that he intended to write a serious work, but could not succeed. Besides, there is absolutely *nothing* in his book, either serious or comic. That of Senancour, on the contrary, if we except two or three pages inspired by the times in which he lived, is very beautiful, very forcible, and full of ideas. His bitter sadness is very eloquent. "O woman, whom I could have loved!" etc. I have stolen this line from him, it is the last one of my book.

To return to the physicians, we may say that they have done themselves injustice by their exteriors. They cannot surely be accused of hypocrisy. With an ostentation of brutality that they get from the lecture-room and the hospital and the handling of the scalpel, they have none the less laid down truly humane doctrines. Rough and cynical in appearance, they have nevertheless founded what may be called the *creed of mercy*.

They think themselves materialists. They are not so much so as they would appear to be. Their discoveries in material things have lent admirable confirmation to the voice of the heart. Natural History

has spoken like Philosophy itself. Nature has uttered the words of the soul.

Nothing is purer and higher than this revolution. . . it is the victory of the Mind.

Hence three capital results :

1. The low and material ideas that were entertained of the periodical crisis of woman are now elevated, purified, spiritualized.

2. The material and brutal decisions, so often unjust, that were passed upon the maiden, are reduced to naught, and marriage brought back to the confidence, the harmony of two hearts.

3. But at the same time it receives a serious consecration from Nature herself. So forcible and decisive is the first marriage, that its physical effects continue in the second.

In the very brief chapter on the Wedding, I have summed up, under a simple form, and with a regard for propriety, the numerous facts for which I am indebted to the confidences of medical men. I have there set forth, in accordance with their instructions, the insignificance of a proof which proves nothing—nowadays especially, in the refined and nervous classes, often sickly and thin-blooded. Ancient barbarism, continued in a so-called spiritual age, began the union by distrust, exacted pain, and often visited a poor innocent girl with eternal sorrow and humiliation. Debased and cruel materialism! Her whom you esteem sufficiently to confide to her your entire life and future, you should place confidence in at once for all her past life. How would it be, if she should dare to ask you about yours? And when she has had a *misfortune*, a weakness even, you are sure that she will love him who adopts her much more than the cruel ingrate whose love was but an outrage.

Medicine has here made matter subordinate, laid down the fact that this bodily accident is entirely secondary. The rights of the soul are reestablished. Marriage henceforward is but love. Far from exacting that this day, which is one of bliss to one, should be a day of tears! to the other, the mother and the husband have been advised of the precautions which diminish pain. (Fabre, I., 3, 19; Menville, II., 103; Raciborski, 133; etc.)

On the grave question of the supposed impurity of woman, her periodical suffering, we find the same material barbarity among these pretended spiritualists. On the other hand, physicians, purifying this

phenomenon, have proved its touching and elevated character. What you call a purgation, you fools, is the sacred wound of love in which your mothers conceived you.

This ovarium, always torn and always healing, is nothing less than a continual accouchement. From 1821 to 1826, two Englishmen, Power and Girwood, it is said, suspected this law. But their works remained unknown, even in England. It was from wholly new and personal observations that the German, Baër, in 1827, established the existence of the ovum in woman, and the Frenchman, Négrier, in 1831 and in 1858, showed that each month the ovum matures, ruptures its envelope, and makes its way from the ovary to the matrix.

Pouchet's great work (*Spontaneous Ovulation*, 1842, 1847) establishes, on a systematic basis, the law of generation, showing by analogous facts, observed in all races of animals, not only that this law is such in the human race, but that it could not be otherwise.

The law laid down by Pouchet, and the modifications added by Négrier and Raciborski (in a report approved by the *Academy of Sciences*), and the unpublished observations of M. Coste, prove that conception only takes place when the discharge announces the appearance of the ovum; that is to say, that it occurs during the courses, as well as a little before or a little after. Hence, there is barrenness during a part of the month.

These truths, endorsed by the opinion of the *Academy of Sciences*, and the teachings of the *College of France*, have appeared in all their glory from the labors of Messrs. Coste and Gerbe. In ten years' observations on women who have committed suicide, they have, by a practical book of admirable clearness, by an atlas (which will remain an immortal chef-d'œuvre), effectually confirmed this law.

The history of human ovology is summed up in a most satisfactory manner in an excellent work, full of new and original matter, the *Physiology* of Messrs. Robin and Béraud. Already this anatomist, our first microscopist (Robin), had shed strong light upon the science of generation, both by his description of the uterine mucus, and his Report on the male ovum, which from the female to the male, from animals to vegetables, discloses the uniformity of nature's process.

In 1847, the same year in which M. Coste published the results of his numerous dissections, and decided the ovology of woman, Dr

here receive the assurance of n

In Vol. II., Chapter IV., pag  
great number of facts, which p  
est in the scale of life, from the  
malia, and even to the human sy  
its actual moment; that the act  
result, but that it has many and t  
long into the future.

The plant-louse is impregnated :  
rations (Bonnet); others reduce th  
fact. The caterpillar is impregna  
(Bernouilli). The bee for a year (1  
brood (Harvey).

As to the mammalia, the most acc  
the skilful and persevering English  
nurses, their marriages, their *mésal*  
hundred years in their stud-book, wit  
alogy, have put science on the right  
observe and experiment. It has be  
who has, though only on one occasi  
sents nothing but asses to the illus  
entertain (Edward Home); or, at  
remind you, by their hides or their fo  
from her station. Our Poitou breed  
do all they can to guard against it (A  
mares are but little wotab

A . . .

wild boar, retains his fierceress, and bears to his peaceful successors, bristling pigs (Meckel). This law, which plainly devotes the female to her first love, and protests against those which follow, appears to be universal among the superior animals.

Is it the same in the human species? Analogous to the other mammalia in the development of the ovum and the periodical crisis (*Veterinary Journal*, 1846), are they so also in the enduring character of the first impregnation? Do the first love and the first child determine those of the future? And does the father of that child extend his paternity to those which the woman may have by a lover, or by a second husband?

There is no doubt that in us, whose mind and will interfere so powerfully in the functions of physical life, the immutability of general laws has to contend with the reactions of freedom and of individual passion, which cannot be calculated upon.

Nevertheless, the facts seem to attest that nature usually resists such reactions, and imparts a durable character to the first fecundation (Lucas, Vol. II., 60). The old-time physicians, Fienus and Aldovrand, observed that adulterous women often had, from the lover, children resembling the husband. In their day, it was an adage that "The son of adultery pleads for his mother." It was supposed that the woman, in this stolen act, had thought of him whom she feared, and that this fear marked her offspring with his features. But this explanation will not do for the females of the lower animals. It is not fear which makes them reproduce the likeness of the first male in the young they bear to the second and his successors.

Besides, we have seen widows, impregnated in their first marriage, afterwards have, by a second, and a dearly beloved husband, children who resembled the first husband, long dead, and but little regretted. Here, neither fear nor love had any influence. It was the physical result of a modification of the organism. The first fecundation influenced the succeeding for several years in advance—perhaps for life.

If it were always thus; if the first impregnation infallibly modified the woman for ever, adultery would be impossible (at least in its results). The possession of the husband being unalterable, the only one deceived would be the lover.

This transformation of the woman does not appear alone in the process of generation, but virtually in everything. The wife, even when very young, after a year or two of marriage wears on her lip a light

**down**, imperceptible in blondes, but very noticeable in brunoettes. The **voice and gait** become less feminine, and proclaim a new condition. But what is surprising, a thing I have often observed, is, that her **handwriting** changes: that of the wife gradually grows more like that of the husband.

Some ancient physicians, Bartholin, Perrault, Sturm, and, later Grasmeyer, have thought that, even without fecundation, the marriage relation suffices, after a time, to masculinize woman. My friend, Doctor Robin, so profound an observer of the microscopic world, without admitting the rash theory of these authors, for different reasons believes in this transformation.

The principle of permanent impregnation, prolonged into the future, saddens one at the first glance like a fate. But, on the other hand, it lights up to a great moral depth the dark crisis of love, and spiritualizes it. It reveals itself in all creatures; at this moment, most clearly in man, in a soaring towards the infinite, a flight into eternity.

What goes on then, with the greatest and the smallest, resembles so little the ordinary phenomena of matter, that we are tempted to say, in regarding the lowest of all created things, Here nothing is matter; all is mind.

One phrase resounds, always the same, along the scale of life, whether you go up or down—a single phrase (Love knows but one)—“I wish for something beyond myself. I wish for too much—all! always!”

The blind impulse of desire in inferior beings is a gross infinity of strength, which, creating an infinity of *numbers*, guarantees an infinity of succession. The superior longing, in ascending, is for an infinity of the beautiful, of the good—an infinity of *quality*. Desire, then, creates concentrated and powerful beings, if not capable of feeling, at least capable of conceiving of, the infinite.

So Love ascends, and always will ascend, without reaching its summit. It would have nothing that is not absolute, endless, without margin or limit. In its profound instinct, it desires itself—like Love Eternal. It penetrates itself with light, feels itself God, but dazzles itself . . . . Darkness closes around it. . . . The Infinite has appeared—disappeared. . . .

“Alas!” it says, “I had so many things to say to it!”

## TRANSLATOR'S APPENDIX



### A Word with M. Michelet.

FROM MADAME HERMANCE LESGUILLON.

THE Memoirs of the Princess Hélène were already written when an admirable book made its appearance: *L'Amour*, by the eminent philosopher Michelet.

By an extraordinary sympathy of ideas, it will be observed, *Les Femmes dans Cent Ans*,\* had responded to almost all the chapters of this genial book, which, while it does full justice to the heart of woman, leaves her far short of the new development that her intellect requires. The spirit of M. Michelet's book is that of the Court of Love, and seems written for a small circle of the élite, where reigns undisturbed the harmony of all the virtues. There are thirty-five millions of human beings to whose needs and sorrows he is blind. He seems to be ignorant of what men think of young girls who are destitute of marriage-portions.

For example, I will repeat to him the bitter words in which a young husband, otherwise very worthy, replied to the love verses of his wife: "My dear, we are not rich; therefore we cannot love each other. I have no time for that; I must earn our living." These cruel words broke the wife's heart. Still the man was not altogether wrong; marriage has its practical side, which kills sentiment. Men do not understand how to unite the two.

While we deplore such words, we must grant that they are true in respect of marriages as they now are. Nowadays it is not man who can instruct the heart of woman; it is not the man who has lived ten

\* By Madame Lesguillon.

or fifteen years in the Saturnalia of pleasure, or in the difficulties of keeping up an appearance, who can live such a life. So long as man does not receive the same moral education as woman, far from teaching her, he will be unable to understand her. Palates accustomed to spices, spirits, and tobacco, are incapable of enjoying the exquisite flavor of fine fruit. So long as men live a life of love before marriage, marriages will be found deficient in love; only one of the wedded pair will love—the wife; if indeed even she does.

M. Michelet's book comes too late. If it had only been written thirty years ago! Then, instead of bringing their fragments of prose to love, the young men of this generation, better instructed, would perhaps have retained some little love for their nuptials.

The Princess Hélène would have said to the author of *L'Amour*: "Nature created you a god, but society made a man of you.

"Your book, full of respect and voluptuous tenderness for woman, is, without your suspecting it, a most painful picture of the sad fate she endures. Instead of raising her to the level of maternity, which creates her by right the equal, and the proud companion of man, you hamper her in a humiliating subjection which makes her more a slave than ever.

"You say wisely that 'Disease is discord,' and you apportion her solely the rôle of invalid. No! woman is not an invalid. God created her to be a mother, and it is from the excess of her best and most beautiful blood that she forms man. The woman who is well-formed, and who obeys the laws of nature, enjoys health. To make her out an invalid is but a sad means of interesting man in her behalf, for she whom he prefers to the mother of his children is in robust health.

"Woman is not afraid of active employment, nor even of labor. When she feels herself useful and beloved, love redoubles her strength and develops her faculties. Later in life, when Nature has accomplished her last work, the wife often remains stronger than her husband for manual or intellectual performances; while he, having believed himself young too long, has yielded to the excesses which shorten life and entail the miseries of the gout and other diseases. Man or woman, one invalid is worth as much as another.

"A woman unhappily married becomes ill, because her spirit is crushed by her subjection to domestic quarrels in which she is as nothing. On the contrary, she who loves her husband and shares with her faithful companion the cares of life, continues as young and



as strong as he. Because he has made her his equal she has remained worthy of his love; the passive, obedient mother is a nobody in the eyes of her children.

"You ignore such and such women, to talk of the eternal woman—that is to say, of the woman inferior to man; can we not do the same by man—exclude those who are inventors, and say that of thirty-six millions of Frenchmen there are thirty-five millions who invent nothing at all?

"It is dangerous to talk so well of their rights to men who are without virtue. The modern man is not devoted to duty, but to caprice and pleasure; manners change, but the standard remains the same.

"In your 'Medication of the Heart,' you say, in speaking of adultery. 'the infidelity of a woman has monstrous consequences which do not attend that of a man.' I would ask you if the man who abandons his children when a bachelor can care much for those who are born to him in wedlock; and if the father who is distracted, or simply outraged, by uncertainty as to the legitimacy of his offspring, takes to heart the troubles of his neighbor, whose house he visits to debauch his wife, and swell the number of his children? It is only the mother who is always a mother, whether she be a betrayed girl or a wedded wife. The father is simply a means, often happy in escaping investigation.

"If children bore their mothers' names, and distinguished themselves for her who gave them their first shelter, their first nourishment, we might erase the odious word, adultery, from the lexicon of law; infidelity would be the term employed, alike for both sexes, and as words make things, there are many men who would never think of it again.

"You say further: 'Infidelity on the part of the wife may falsify history for a thousand years!' Has it been of greater service to history that the fidelity of a wife produced a Nero, when her infidelity might have brought forth a Marcus Aurelius? Of more service to history that Louis XIV. was not the son of Louis XIII.?

"In low life this attested incident occurred: of the marriage between a humpback and a well-formed woman, there were born four little humpbacks, girls and boys; the mother, disgusted, mortified by this too faithful resemblance, loved a handsome young fellow, and her fifth child was perfect. What do you think was the result? It was the first proud day for her husband; he had a perfect child!

"No punishment would be severe enough if she knew what she

did.' That sentence was written with the iron pen of the Middle Ages.

"With your sense of justice, you felt that it was, and you resume:

"'But she is nearly always very far from even dreaming of it. Premeditated infidelity, prompted by hate and malice, is a thing of infinitely rare occurrence. The first false step, at least, is nearly always accidental, the result of a negative weakness, less an act than an inability to act, to resist.

"'Warm, *full-blooded* women are dazzled and bewildered, and at certain periods have an actual vertigo. Those of a lymphatic temperament have an extreme placidity of will; they are wont to yield; they know that it becomes them, and hence they never resist. It costs them too much of an effort to refuse.'

"Since that which was originally a crime has become an accident of nature, we should decide for the woman how far she is responsible for infidelity, and not brand both with everlasting shame.

"I would ask you why men who stake their honor on this question, relish so excessively the jests that the drama, from the beginning, has retailed at the expense of betrayed husbands; and how vaudeville writers, who may themselves be hoodwinked, dare to indite their wit-cisms.

"Are you aware of this fact, sir: that woman alone suffers from the ridicule which attaches to marriage, for she alone possesses the virtues belonging to it, and she alone understands it in its sacred aspect? Marriage and man's honor would have been done for long ago, if women had not kept guard over themselves.

"A young husband, worthy of being beloved, endowed with strong affection for his family, earning their daily bread, faithful to his home, his wife, his business, would certainly have the right to be indignant at the infidelity of his wife, above all at her adultery, a term which may be applied to infidelity only when an illegitimate child has appeared in the sacred arch of the family.

"This woman would be criminal; but in such a case no influence could prevail over her, and we may affirm that we never met with a single adulterous woman.

"That noble martyr of love who was assassinated by her husband will show how men understand marriage. Had she not the humility you require, this unhappy mother who besought only the sight of her

children, and her place in the nuptial couch? Was she not devoted to her duties with sufficient Christianliness to excite the pity of her husband? Did she soften him? No, her tender persecution enraged him. Nothing will protect a wife who is no longer beloved but her own dignity and independence.

"Your gentle kindness for woman induced you to write that chapter which should provoke a melancholy smile from you for those to whom you address it.

"Do not strike a woman, though she have committed a hundred faults, not even with a flower!" "The women of the Middle Ages submitted; and even now, those of certain races submit patiently to conjugal discipline. With the nervous women of our day this would be a dangerous attempt. Some would die at the least blow. Even when taken in her guilt, the woman should be spared. In but one case, where the despair of a great remorse threatens her life or her reason, if she offers herself up to punishment, begs and implores it, a slight bodily suffering may be granted her, to lessen that of the soul."

"That is a prescription for the making of monarchs—absolute, yet overflowing with mildness.

"In what age are we, sir, and what progress have human beings made in the respect due to the personality of each, since you believe yourself compelled to bestow such advice upon him who makes his wife a mother, in very heart?

"And you are surprised that there are women, who, insulted in their fellow-women, express their opinion of what concerns them. Should not the contrary astonish you more?

"What would you think if, becoming a woman, richly constituted by Nature for reproduction and love, you were forced for the most beautiful half of your life to remain faithful to a husband who, through self-interest, or for fear of being betrayed, or through physical impotence, would leave you to drag out miserable, barren days? What would you say if, through a second marriage, revealing to you the falseness of the first, you should become rich in happiness and in maternity?

"Yes, women are good! You sacredly appreciate their hearts; one can well see that you have lived nine months in the loins of a mother who listened to your life—a glorious mother, who revealed to you much of her greatness, but who spared you many griefs, many secrets.

"The obedience, of which you say so much, should not be a law of

marriage, when the marriage is not one of love. Obedience and humility are a mystery of love, whose sublimity God alone fathoms.

"The husband who does not win his wife by the assurance of an equality which breaks down all barriers, will never entirely possess her; women appreciate delicacy and goodness as well as you.

"You say: 'They protect each other.' That is a great truth, and it proves that Nature created them with the same passions, the same temptations, the same weaknesses.

"Why, then, do you hesitate to desire that woman should be instructed? Make haste to wish it, or your book will not be better understood by this sex than by the other. Man's example has transformed women's hearts, and the young girl of to-day is nothing like her of half a century ago. They have unlearned by heart what man has made them forget. You are afraid to render them strong and well-informed, capable of being their own physicians, moral and physical. You dread to have them prefer the beautiful books of Jules Simon and yourself, to their trifling occupations, which elevate neither their minds nor their souls. You fear to have companions whom you may boldly declare your equals. What do you gain by this? Only that they do not understand you; while many of them—those, too, who believe themselves virtuous—this day pronounce your book immoral. They are shocked by the truths you display to them, in spite of the divine purity in which they are clothed. See what progress they have yet to make in the sense of the beautiful, in the virtue of love!

"You would wait till they have received the teachings of man through the tenderness of love. Do you know what the men say about it? That women ought not to read your book, because it makes them exacting.

"Do you believe that a book on love can profit this generation? Men run after money, and so fatigue themselves in the race that they have no strength left for love. During these days marriage unties its sweetest knots. If there remain only the cares, the pain, the weariness, the unhappiness of the wife will have no consolation. Happily there are two great virtues which humanity cannot ignore: Maternity and Love.

"It is these virtues that woman is called upon to quicken with her soul, to defend with her spirit and her courage. It is she who must renew them, and bring them to life again one day!

"Marriage may yet, perhaps, be saved!"

THE END.



CATALOGUE  
OF THE  
PUBLICATIONS  
OF  
RUDD & CARLETON,  
130 GRAND STREET,  
(BROOKS BUILDING, COR. OF BROADWAY,)  
NEW YORK.





## NEW BOOKS

And New Editions Just Published by

RUDD & CARLETON,

130 GRAND STREET,

NEW YORK (BROOKS BUILDING, COR. OF BROADWAY.)

---

N.B.—RUDD & CARLETON, UPON RECEIPT OF THE PRICE, WILL SEND ANY OF THE FOLLOWING BOOKS, BY MAIL, *postage free*, TO ANY PART OF THE UNITED STATES. THIS CONVENIENT AND VERY SAFE MODE MAY BE ADOPTED WHEN THE NEIGHBORING BOOKSELLERS ARE NOT SUPPLIED WITH THE DESIRED WORK.

---

### NOTHING TO WEAR.

A Satirical Poem. By WILLIAM ALLEN BUTLER. Profusely and elegantly embellished with fine Illustrations on tinted paper, by Hoppin. Muslin, price 50 cents.

### MILES STANDISH ILLUSTRATED.

With exquisite *Photographs* from original Drawings by JOHN W. EHNINGER, illustrating Longfellow's new Poem. Bound in elegant quarto, morocco covers, price \$6 00.

### BOOK OF THE CHESS CONGRESS.

A complete History of Chess in America and Europe, with Morphy's best games. By D. W. FISKE, editor of *Chess Monthly* (assisted by Morphy and Paulsen). Price \$1 50.

### WOMAN'S THOUGHTS ABOUT WOMEN.

The latest and best work by the author of "John Halifax, Gentleman," "Agatha's Husband," "The Ogilvies," &c. From the London edition. Muslin, price \$1 00.

## VERNON GROVE;

By Mrs. CAROLINE H. GLOVER. "A Novel which will give its author high rank among the novelists of the day."—*Atlantic Monthly*. 12mo., Muslin, price \$1 00

## BALLAD OF BABIE BELL,

And other Poems. By THOMAS BAILEY ALDRICH. The first selected collection of verses by this author. 12mo Exquisitely printed, and bound in muslin, price 75 cents.

## TRUE LOVE NEVER DID RUN SMOOTH.

An Eastern Tale, in Verse. By THOMAS BAILEY ALDRICH, author of "Babie Bell, and other Poems." Printed on colored plate paper. Muslin, price 50 cents

## BEATRICE CENCI.

A Historical Novel. By F. D. GUERRAZZI. Translated from the original Italian by LUIGI MONTI. Muslin, two volumes in one, with steel portrait. price \$1 25.

## ISABELLA ORSINI.

A new historical novel. By F. D. GUERRAZZI, author of "Beatrice Cenci." Translated by MONTI, of Harvard College. With steel portrait. Muslin, price \$1 25.

## DOCTOR ANTONIO.

A charming Love Tale of Italy. By G. RUFFINI, author of "Lorenzo Benoni," "Dear Experience," &c From the last London edition. Muslin, price \$1 00.

## DEAR EXPERIENCE.

A Tale. By G. RUFFINI, author of "Doctor Antonio," "Lorenzo Benoni," &c. With illustrations by Leech, of the *London Punch*. 12mo. Muslin, price \$1 00.



A BACHELOR'S STORY.

By OLIVER BUNCE. Upon the thread of a pleasant story the author has strung a wampum of love, philosophy and humor. 12mo. Muslin, price \$1 00.

LIFE OF HUGH MILLER,

Author of "Schools and Schoolmasters," "Old Red Sandstone," &c. From the last Glasgow edition. Prepared by THOMAS N. BROWN. Muslin, price \$1 00

AFTERNOON OF UNMARRIED LIFE.

An interesting theme, admirably treated, and combined with strong common sense. Companion to "Woman's Thoughts." From London edition. Price \$1 00

LECTURES OF LOLA MONTEZ,

Including her "Autobiography," "Wits and Women of Paris," "Comic Aspect of Love," "Beautiful Women," "Gallantry," &c. Muslin, steel portrait, price \$1 00.

K. N. PEPPER PAPERS.

Containing the Writings and laughable Verses of one of the first humorous contributors to "*Knickerbocker Magazine*." With Illustrations. Muslin, price \$1 00.

CURIOSITIES OF NATURAL HISTORY.

By FRANCIS T. BUCKLAND, M.A. A sparkling collection of surprises in Natural History, and the charm of a lively narrative. From 4th London edition, price \$1 25.

BROWN'S CARPENTER'S ASSISTANT.

The best practical work on Architecture; with Plans for every description of Building. Illustrated with over 200 Plates. Strongly bound in leather, price \$5 00.

## THE VAGABOND.

A volume of Miscellaneous Papers, treating in colloquial sketches upon Literature, Society, and Art. By ADAM BARREAU. Bound in muslin, 12mo, price \$1 00.

## COSMOGONY;

Or, the Mysteries of Creation. A remarkable book, being an Analysis of the First Chapter of Genesis. By THOMAS A. DAVIES. Octavo, muslin, price \$2 00

## FOLLOWING THE DRUM;

Or, Glimpses of Frontier Life. Being brilliant Sketches of Recruiting Incidents on the Rio Grande, &c. By Mrs. EDGAR L. VIELA. 12mo. Muslin, price \$1 00.

## ETHEL'S LOVE-LIFE.

By Mrs. M. J. M. SWEAT. "Rarely has any recent work expressed the intenseness of a woman's love with such hearty abandon." 12mo. Muslin, price \$1 00.

## STORIES FOR CHILDHOOD.

By AUNT HATTY (Mrs. Coleman). Beautifully bound in cloth, gilt, and profusely illustrated. Put up in boxes containing 12 assorted volumes. Price per box, \$4 00.

## GOOD CHILDREN'S LIBRARY.

By UNCLE THOMAS. A dozen charming stories, beautifully illustrated; bound in cloth, gilt backs. Put up in boxes containing 12 assorted volumes. Price per box, \$4 00.

## SOUTHWOLD.

By Mrs. LILLIE DEVEREUX UMSTED. "A spirited and well drawn Society novel—somewhat intensified but bold and clever." 12mo. Muslin, price \$1 00.

DOESTICKS' LETTERS.

Being a compilation of the Original Letters of O. K. P. Doesticks, P. B. With many comic tinted illustrations by John McLenan. 12mo. Muslin, price \$1 00.

PLU-RI-BUS-TAH.

A song that's by-no-author. *Not* a parody on "Hiawatha." By Doesticks. With 150 humorous illustrations by McLenan. 12mo. Muslin, price \$1 00

THE ELEPHANT CLUB.

An irresistibly droll volume. By Doesticks, assisted by KNIGHT RUSS OCKSIDE, M.D. One of his best works. Profusely illustrated by McLenan. Muslin, price \$1 00.

THE WITCHES OF NEW YORK.

A new humorous work by Doesticks; being minute, particular, and faithful Revelations of Black Art Mysteries in Gotham. 12mo. Muslin, price \$1 00

TWO WAYS TO WEDLOCK.

A Novellette. Reprinted from the columns of Morris & Willis' *New York Home Journal*. 12mo. Handsomely bound in muslin. Price \$1 00,

THE SPUYTENDEVIL CHRONICLE.

A sparkling Novel of young Fashionable Life in New York; a Saratoga Season; Flirtations, &c. A companion to the "Potiphar Papers." Muslin, price 75 cents.

ROMANCE OF A POOR YOUNG MAN.

From the French of OCTAVE FEUILLET. An admirable and striking work of fiction. Translated from the Seventh Paris edition. 12mo. Muslin, price \$1 00.

**THE CULPRIT FAY.**

By JOSEPH RODMAN DRAKE. A charming edition of this world-celebrated Faery Poem. Printed on colored plate paper. Muslin, 12mo. Frontispiece. Price, 50 cts.

**THE NEW AND THE OLD ;**

Or, California and India in Romantic Aspects. By J. W. PALMER, M.D., author of "Up and Down the Irrawaddi." Abundantly illustrated. Muslin, 12mo. \$1.25.

**UP AND DOWN THE IRRAWADDI ;**

Or, the Golden Dagon. Being passages of adventure in the Burman Empire. By J. W. PALMER, M.D., author of "The New and the Old." Illustrated. Price, \$1.00.

**ERIC; OR, LITTLE BY LITTLE.**

A Tale of Roslyn School. By F. W. FARRAR (Fellow of Trinity College, Cambridge). An admirable picture of inner school life. Muslin, 12mo. Price, \$1.00.

**RECOLLECTIONS OF THE REVOLUTION.**

A private manuscript journal of home events, kept during the American Revolution by the Daughter of a Clergyman. Printed in unique style. Muslin. Price, \$1.00

**HARTLEY NORMAN.**

A New Novel. "Close and accurate observation, enables the author to present the scenes of everyday life with great spirit and originality." Muslin, 12mo. Price, \$1.00.

**BORDER WAR.**

A Tale of Disunion. By J. B. JONES, author of "Wild Western Scenes." One of the most popular books ever published in America. Muslin. 12mo. Price, \$1.25.



3 2044 019 414 853

THE BORROWER WILL BE CHARGED  
AN OVERDUE FEE IF THIS BOOK IS  
NOT RETURNED TO THE LIBRARY ON  
OR BEFORE THE LAST DATE STAMPED  
BELOW. NON-RECEIPT OF OVERDUE  
NOTICES DOES NOT EXEMPT THE  
BORROWER FROM OVERDUE FEES.

Harvard College Widener Library  
Cambridge, MA 02138 (617) 495-2413

